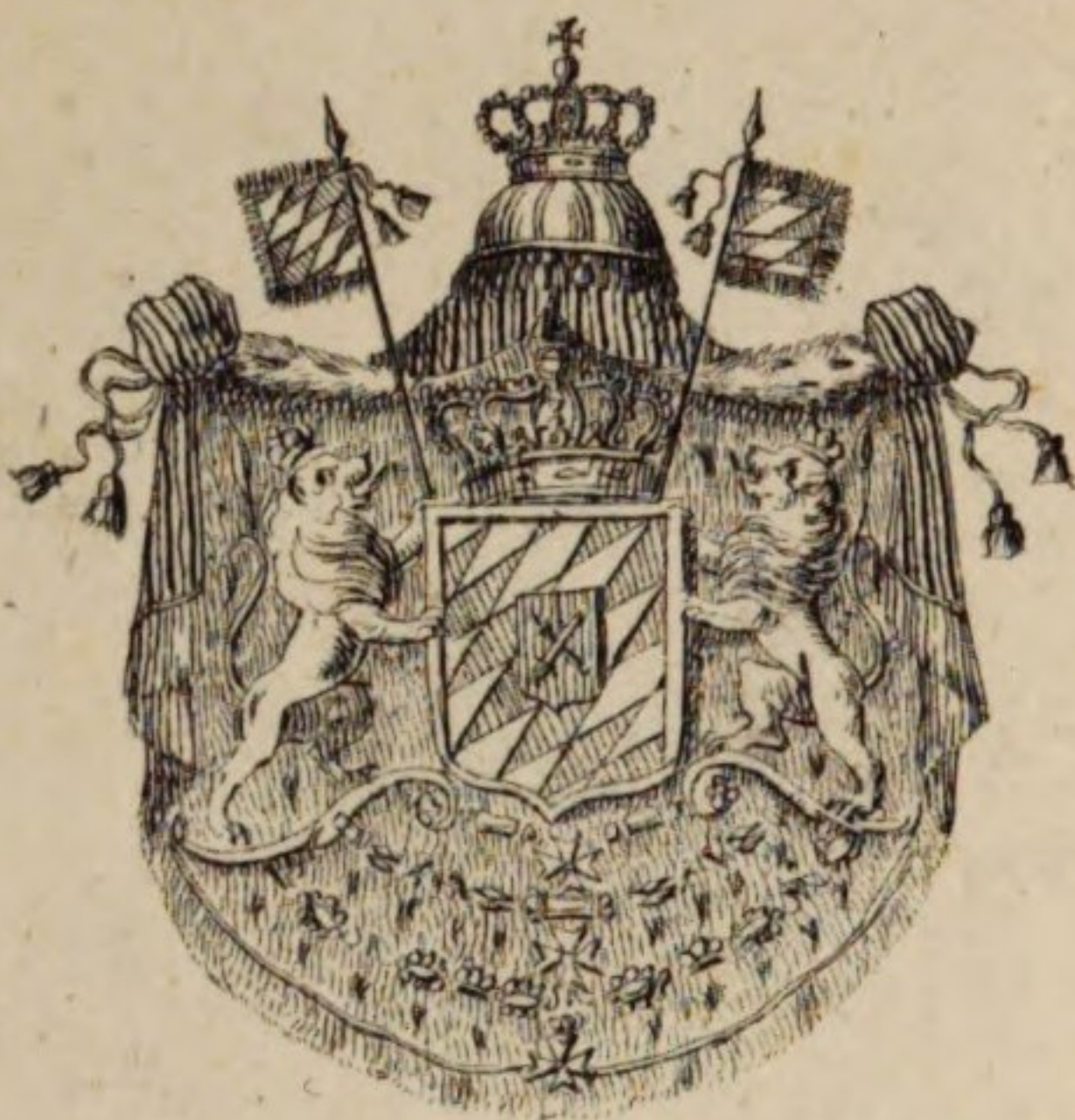


L. O. angl.
63.



**BIBLIOTHECA
REGIA
MONACENSIS.**

CHRYSALE:

OR,

THE ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited Views of
SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES;
WITH
INTERESTING ANECDOTES,

Of the most noted Persons in every Rank of Life,

Through whose Hands it has passed.

BY AN ADEPT.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

-----Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To shew Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likeness,
And the very age and body of the Times
His Form and Pressure.

Shakespeare.

VOL. III.

Cooke's Edition.



EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

London:

Printed for C. COOKE, No. 17, Paternoster-Row
And sold by all the Booksellers in
Great-Britain and
Ireland.

**Bayerische
Staatsbibliothek
München**

CHRYSA L:

OR, THE ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

The folly of a person's prostituting his character to please his company aggravated by the dangerous mistake of ridicule for applause. Chrysal's master changes place with the chaplain, and preaches him an interesting sermon, in which, among remarks more just than polite, he gives an uncommon reason for the particular deformity of vice in women.

I HAVE already taken notice of the effect which the advice and example of the captain had upon every one in the ship. The officers lived like a family of brothers, and the men did their duty with regularity and pleasure; but, though all paid due respect to what he said, it was impossible to work such an instantaneous reformation, but that some of them would now and then jest among themselves upon his conduct, as, from comparison with that of others of his rank, inconsistent with his character; and in other respects indulge in the levities of discourse and behaviour too general among persons not much accustomed to the rules of rational conversation.

But, whatever allowances the circumstances of their education might claim for such fallies in the officers, the person who transgressed most was certainly entitled to none. This was the chaplain, who, to avoid the imputation of being hypocritically sanctified, ran into the opposite extreme. The selfish vanity of man always takes pleasure in seeing any person debase himself by acting beneath his character, especially if that character is such as appears to be placed in a more respectable point of view than their own. The officers, who in general look upon a chaplain as no better than lumber in a ship, and think he is placed as a kind of check upon them, were pleased with his prostitution, which he, by a common mistake of ridicule for applause, gave still further into,

imagining they laughed *with* him, when, in reality, they laughed *at* him.

But my master beheld the matter in another light, and taking an opportunity one day, when the chaplain and he were by themselves in the ward-room, ‘ I have observed
‘ with much concern, Sir,’ said he, ‘ that you are falling
‘ into an error, which I have known prove fatal to many
‘ gentlemen of your profession. This is departing from
‘ your character, in order to accommodate yourself to
‘ what you think the humour of your company. Be-
‘ lieve me, Sir, no man ever did so, who did not imme-
‘ diately fall into contempt with the very people whose
‘ approbation he strove to purchase at so dear a rate.—
‘ The greatest libertine despises a clergyman who is a
‘ libertine; and the reason is plain. You are set apart
‘ from the rest of mankind, to perform the rites of reli-
‘ gion, and inculcate virtue by your precepts and exam-
‘ ple; and for this you are paid by the public, who ex-
‘ pect that you should earn your wages, by doing your
‘ duty; and look upon those who do not as no better
‘ than cheats. This may appear an odd way of speak-
‘ ing, but it is true nevertheless. On the other hand,
‘ where a clergyman fulfils his duty, and enforces his
‘ preaching by his practice, though he may not abso-
‘ lutely reform all those with whom he converses, yet he
‘ will certainly work this good effect, that he will keep
‘ them in awe, and prevent their running into outrage-
‘ ous lengths of wickedness, at least in his presence. For,
‘ whatever people may inconsiderately imagine, no man
‘ ever acted in character, who was not respected; no man
‘ ever acted out of character, who was not despised.

‘ Do but reflect a moment, in what light you yourself
‘ would look upon a lady, who should speak obscenely,
‘ swear, drink, and talk of fighting, and it will shew you
‘ the justice of this remark. For what makes these vices
‘ so particularly hateful in a woman, is not any thing in
‘ their nature particularly contradictory to the sex, more
‘ than ours, but because they are contrary to her charac-
‘ ter. I beg your pardon, Sir, for talking to you in
‘ this

‘ this free manner, in respect to your conduct, which I
‘ am sensible concerns only yourself; but as the errors
‘ you have fallen into appear to have arisen merely from
‘ inadvertency and mistake, I think it my duty to cau-
‘ tion you against the danger of them, particularly in
‘ your present situation, with which I have had the op-
‘ portunity of being much better acquainted than you
‘ possibly can be. I was in the service long, very long,
‘ before you were born, and have been intimate with
‘ many chaplains, but never knew one who prostituted
‘ his character to humour his company, who was not
‘ neglected by them when they had it in their power to
‘ have served him; as, on the contrary, I have known
‘ many instances of those who have reaped the happy fruits
‘ of a regular and virtuous conduct, by which they ac-
‘ quired an esteem that proved the foundation of their
‘ fortune; and if all have not been equally successful,
‘ their disappointment must be attributed to some other
‘ cause. I would not by this be understood to advise
‘ you to a morose distance and stiffness of behaviour, or
‘ asperity of reproof upon every occasion. They sel-
‘ dom, if ever, do good, in any situation; in yours they
‘ will certainly do hurt, by piquing false pride to act
‘ in opposition to them, without regard to the conse-
‘ quences. An obliging temper, and an uniformly decent
‘ conduct, lead insensibly to imitation, where contra-
‘ diction or direct admonition would be held impertinent.
‘ These hints are so obvious, that they may seem unne-
‘ cessary; but it is want of attention to them which has
‘ made so many chaplains miscarry in life, and indeed has
‘ brought the very character into disrepute.’

The chaplain, who wanted neither natural good sense, nor virtuous inclination, was struck with the justice and force of this rebuke. He thanked my master in the most ingenuous manner, and promised to regulate his future conduct by his advice. Such a change at first naturally exposed him to the merriment of his companions; but as my master took his part, and shewed them the injustice of such behaviour, it soon wore off, and he had the heart-

felt satisfaction to find himself treated with friendly respect and confidence by those whose gross familiarity had before often given him pain, as it evidently implied contempt.

CHAP. II.

Chrysal describes true compassion; and shows the general consequence of a man's acknowledging distress, with the reasons of it. Chrysal's master is prevailed upon by his captain to tell him the cause of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generosity. Chrysal enters into a new service.

AS the captain maintained the most friendly intercourse with his officers, he soon observed that my master laboured under some heavy distress of mind. This naturally raised his compassion, and as real compassion never sees distress, which it is not desirous of alleviating, he frequently took occasion, when they were by themselves, to turn his discourse upon such subjects as he thought might lead him to open himself; but finding that modesty, or a reserve contracted from long acquaintance with misfortune, and observation that the knowledge of a man's being in distress always sinks him in the esteem of his companions, by cutting off their hopes of service from him, and alarming their apprehensions of his expecting assistance from them, prevented his taking the hint, he resolved to break through forms, and ask him directly.

Seeing him therefore, one day, walking the quarter-deck, in a mood of deepest melancholy, he called him into the great cabin, and desiring him to sit down, after a little general chat, 'I fear, sir,' said he, 'that something hangs upon your spirits. If it is proper to be communicated, let me know what it is, and depend upon every assistance in my power to make you easy. I ask not from idle or impertinent curiosity.'—'Sir,' answered my master, struck with the manner in which he spoke, 'I believe you above the influence of such motives, and shall therefore obey your kind commands without scruple. It is too true that I am unhappy;
' and

‘ and I fear my unhappiness is too common. I have de-
 ‘ voted my life to a profession in which I have served my
 ‘ country above forty years with fidelity ; and I will take
 ‘ the liberty to say with some success : And now, when
 ‘ my constitution is broken with wounds, fatigue, and
 ‘ change of climates, when nature calls for rest and re-
 ‘ freshment, the only reward I have to expect is poverty,
 ‘ and its inseparable attendant, contempt. This, sir, is
 ‘ the cause of my unhappiness ; and such a cause, as I
 ‘ believe you will think to be a just one.’—‘ Very true,
 ‘ sir,’ replied the captain, ‘ it is a just one ; and what
 ‘ must affect every man of spirit, and a generous way of
 ‘ thinking. But you should not yield to it too far ! You
 ‘ are still in the vigour of life ; and, while the war con-
 ‘ tinues, should look forward with hope. Though you
 ‘ have been unsuccessful hitherto, fortune may prove more
 ‘ kind.’—‘ Alas, sir !’ returned my master. ‘ I have
 ‘ been so long cheated by hope, that I now detest it.
 ‘ When I came out upon this last expedition, our force
 ‘ made me so confident of success, and I was so well ac-
 ‘ quainted with the wealth in the place, that I unhappily
 ‘ gave way to hope, and ran into expences, which, though
 ‘ far from being unnecessary, were imprudent, and
 ‘ threaten now to involve me in ruin, on my return home,
 ‘ as it has been thought proper by our superiors to rate
 ‘ our service in the conquest at so low a price.’—‘ If that
 ‘ is the case, then !’ said the captain, ‘ do not return till
 ‘ matters mend. Whenever I am ordered home, I’ll
 ‘ take care to get you removed into another ship. Your
 ‘ staying abroad on such an account is not inconsistent
 ‘ with the strictest honour, as you do it with an intention
 ‘ truly honest.’

‘ Dear sir,’ answered my master, ‘ that is very true.
 ‘ But I am precluded even from the wretched relief of a
 ‘ voluntary exile. I have a wife and children at home,
 ‘ the apprehension of whose distresses drives me to despair.
 ‘ It was to clothe and settle them in a little habitation,
 ‘ where they might enjoy the indispensable necessities of
 ‘ life with some degree of comfort, that I anticipated my
 ‘ success

‘ success in the manner I mentioned ; and now, as the
 ‘ success has fallen so far short of what I thought just ex-
 ‘ pectation, all the former savings of my life, (savings
 ‘ from the very necessities of nature,) will be torn away
 ‘ by the rapacious hands of merciless creditors, to make
 ‘ up the deficiency in the articles bought of themselves
 ‘ to discharge their demands, and my wretched family
 ‘ thrown upon the unfriendly world, without its being in
 ‘ my power to assist them. I must therefore return, and
 ‘ go into jail, to prevent their starving in the streets.
 ‘ What affected myself only, honest indignation enabled
 ‘ me to support. I have seen boys, whose ignorance I
 ‘ despised, and men whose principles I detested, prefer-
 ‘ red to command, while my services were over-looked ;
 ‘ but, as I had not the interest of the former, nor the
 ‘ modish merit of the latter, I bore my fate with pa-
 ‘ tience. But to have those dearer to me than life ex-
 ‘ posed to misery, is more than I can bear.’—‘ Nor shall
 ‘ you bear it!’ replied the captain, who had feigned to
 cough, to hide the sympathetic tear that glistened in his
 eye, ‘ Nor shall you bear it ! How much is the debt that
 ‘ alarms you ? I will advance it for you directly ; and not
 ‘ that only, I will take upon me to make your merit, (to
 ‘ which I am no stranger,) known to your superiors, in
 ‘ such a light as shall not fail of just reward.’

‘ O Sir!’ returned my master, as soon as the fulness
 of his heart gave him utterance, ‘ how can I submit to
 ‘ obligations, to which it is impossible I should ever make
 ‘ any return !’ ‘ All the return I desire’ answered the cap-
 tain, ‘ is your friendship. Speak ! how much do you
 ‘ want ? The packet is yet in sight. I will order a sig-
 ‘ nal to be made for her, and give you a draft upon my
 ‘ agent.’—‘ Good heaven!’ exclaimed my master. ‘ Can
 ‘ there be such virtue in man.’—‘ Come ! what is the
 ‘ sum ?’ interrupted the captain, who wanted to shorten a
 conversation, that began to be too affecting to him. ‘ I
 ‘ shall think you doubt my sincerity if you hesitate to ac-
 ‘ cept of my friendship.’—

‘ Such a doubt,’ returned my master, whose heart a
 gush

gush of tears had lightened, 'would be a blacker crime than ever stained my soul! No! I receive your beneficence with humble gratitude, as from the hand of heaven, nor will mention any other return but what must be made to that, till it shall be pleased to bless me with better ability.' Then pulling out his pocket-book, 'Here is the account of what I owe,' continued he, giving him some papers, and a purse containing little more than his share of the price of the smuggler's boat: 'And here is all my worldly wealth, which is no more than an assignment of my miserable prize-money, and these few pieces of gold, thrown by fortune in my way, mostly since our hands were tied up by the capitulation. For the balance I must be your debtor.'—'For the balance!' answered the captain, returning the purse and the assignment. 'No! you shall be my debtor,' if you will call it so! 'for the whole. It would be strange friendship to strip you of every thing. You may want yourself.'—

'Excuse me, Sir,' interrupted my master, unable to suppress the delicacy, the dignity of honour, 'I am not so low a wretch, as to accept of more than I indispensibly want; and that for persons dearer to me than myself. If you will not permit me to make the debt as light as I can, it is impossible for me to receive your friendship, however essential to the happiness of my heart. I am sorry you should have entertained so mean an opinion of me.'—'I have the highest opinion of you!' replied the captain, who saw what pain he had given him, 'and spoke in the warmth of my regard, without the most distant design of giving you offence. But you shall make your own terms, on this condition, though, that if you have any occasion for money, you will apply to me with the freedom of a friend.'

To such a proposal, it was impossible to refuse assenting. My master complied, and the captain taking the money, &c. from him, desired that he would order a signal to be made for the packet, and write his letters, while he himself should draw a bill upon his agent.—

The

The sentiments expressed by the captain made it a pleasure to me to pass into his service on this occasion. As soon as the lieutenant went out, my new master walked a turn or two about his cabin, in the exalted happiness of conscious virtue; and then drawing a bill for considerably more than the lieutenant was to pay, he desired that he should be called, and when he entered, ‘I beg your pardon,’ said he, ‘for interrupting you, but it is to desire that you will present my compliments to your wife, and tell her I beg she will accept of a trifling present from me, which I have taken the liberty to include in the bill. Come! no words! In this I will not be contradicted.’ ‘O sir!’ answered the lieutenant, catching his hand, as he reached him the bill, and kissing it eagerly, ‘this is too much! my heart will burst.’—Saying which, he went out of the cabin, in a silence more expressive of his soul, than all the flights of eloquence.

CHAP. III.

History of a lieutenant of a man of war. A comparison between the rewards of merit, in the land and sea services; with a remarkable instance of a great man’s remembering an old friend. The consequence of attempting to set up for a mender of manners, and of a man’s not meeting an opportunity of making himself remarkable.

WHEN every thing was settled, and the packet failed, the lieutenant desired leave to wait upon my master; and as soon as he entered, ‘I come, sir,’ said he, ‘to pay you the thanks, which the fulness of my heart would not let me utter before. You have raised me to happiness from the lowest state of despair.’—‘Hold my friend!’ answered my master, taking his hand, and squeezing it tenderly. ‘Speak no more of it I conjure you. I am abundantly overpaid for what I have done, by the pleasure of having served a man of merit; and shall think you repine at my happiness in being able to purchase that pleasure, if I ever hear the affair mentioned more.’

To relieve the lieutenant, whom he saw oppressed with gratitude, he then changed the conversation to another subject,

subject, when the lieutenant showed so much good sense, and solid judgment, that my master could not forbear expressing his astonishment, that such a man should have been so long unpromoted in the service.

‘ If you can have patience to hear the story of my life,’ answered the lieutenant, ‘ it will soon explain that difficulty to you.—My father was an officer in the army, who was rewarded for the loss of a leg, and thirty years service with the half pay of a captain of foot. As he had a wife and children to maintain and provide for, he retired to a cheap country, where he lived in the most rigid œconomy, in hopes of saving, for he could not make any thing, being precluded from every kind of industry, by the profession to which he had devoted his youth. The first acquaintance a stranger gets in a country place is the parson of the parish. It was my father’s happiness to fix his habitation, where there was a clergyman, who would have been a valuable acquaintance in any place, and who was equally happy in the acquisition of a rational acquaintance in him. The common intercourse of neighbourhood was, therefore, soon improved between them into the strongest friendship, in the intimacy of which, as my father would often naturally mention his anxiety for his children, his friend persuaded him to breed me, the eldest, to the sea-service, in which he thought he himself might be able to serve me, by his interest with several commanders, with whom he had been acquainted formerly, when chaplain to a man of war. “ That is the service ! ” would the good man say, with pleasure sparkling in his eyes.’ “ That is the service in which merit is never disregarded. You would not have been laid aside after thirty years, to pine upon five shillings a day, if you had been bred to the sea. No ! no ! merit is all that is necessary there.”

‘ Such an argument was too flattering to my father’s hopes to be resisted. Though he felt the evil of not having been bred to a business himself, he was charmed at the thought of his son’s being placed in the way of
‘ rising

‘ rising to an higher sphere, and readily assented to the
‘ advice of his friend, who, not content with mere ad-
‘ vice, insisted on taking me home with him, and giving
‘ me such an education as should qualify me to make a
‘ figure in the profession to which he had directed me.
“ If ever a man of merit in the sea-service,” would he of-
‘ ten say, “ fails of rising, it is for want of having had a
“ good education to found his hopes upon. A mere sea-
“ man may work a ship, but an admiral should be a
“ scholar.”

‘ How well this reasoning was founded experience daily
‘ shows ! though it would be ingratitude in me to arraign
‘ it, as the little taste for letters which I acquired from
‘ his care, if it has not contributed to my advancement,
‘ has at least enabled me to support the shock of disap-
‘ pointment, as well as to avoid many evils, into
‘ which I have seen others, who had not the same
‘ advantage, fall. At sixteen (for he insisted that it was
‘ most wretched policy to turn a boy loose upon the world
‘ before he had come to the use of reason, and was well
‘ instructed in the principles of morality and religion, for
‘ the sake of gaining a couple of years advance :) At
‘ sixteen, I say, I was sent to sea, provided with a chest
‘ of books, and mathematical instruments, and a good
‘ suit of cloths, not to discredit the recommendation
‘ which my best friend gave me to an admiral, with
‘ whom he had been most intimate when a lieutenant ;
‘ and whose readiness to serve him in any thing he would
‘ not admit a doubt of. On my presenting my letter,
‘ the admiral at first had forgot the name, but recol-
‘ lecting himself at length on my mentioning some cir-
‘ cumstances which I had often heard my friend dwell
‘ upon with pleasure, “ Very true,” said he, “ I remember
“ him now. He made the best bowl of punch of any
“ man in the navy.”—

‘ This was all the notice the *great man* took of him,
‘ or of me on his account, except I should add, that on
‘ his captain’s observing I should make a good figure on
‘ the quarter deck, I was directly rated a midshipman—

‘ a favour for which I soon found I was indebted to his
‘ caution of sending me well dressed, much more than to
‘ his interest. Though I felt this disappointment of my
‘ first hopes very severely, on my friend’s account as well
‘ as my own, I could not think of shocking him with the
‘ news, but saying, in general terms, that I had been
‘ well received, resolved to apply myself to my business,
‘ and try whether I could not deserve that favour which
‘ he had failed to procure me. As I had been accus-
‘ tomed to conversation very different from that of those
‘ with whom alone I could now converse, I took every
‘ opportunity, when off duty, of running to my books.
‘ But the relief I found from this was for the present
‘ over-balanced by the general ridicule into which it drew
‘ me; especially, as I not only avoided obscenity, swearing,
‘ and drinking myself, but had also been so imprudent as
‘ to rebuke others for them. I was immediately nick-
‘ named *the parson*, and avoided by every one in the ship.
‘ I need not describe to you the situation of a petit offi-
‘ cer, insulted by those below him, ridiculed by his equals,
‘ and looked down upon with contempt by his superiors,
‘ who forgot they ever were in his station themselves. I
‘ bore it for fifteen years, at the end of which time,
‘ having the good fortune to be sent to London, with a
‘ press-gang, on purpose to mortify me, for I always
‘ disliked that particular duty more than any other in the
‘ service, on seeing an advertisement in the news-papers,
‘ that all who were qualified by their standing to be lieu-
‘ tenants in the navy should attend to pass their examina-
‘ tion, I offered myself without any other introduction,
‘ or interest, and was appointed to a ship. In this sta-
‘ tion I have now done my duty for five and twenty years,
‘ without reprehension; but as I have no *corporation in-*
‘ *terest* to push me at home, none of the *modern polite ac-*
‘ *complishments* to recommend me to the favourites of for-
‘ tune, whom I occasionally meet in the service, nor have
‘ ever had the good luck to find an opportunity of mak-
‘ ing myself remarkable, by any action of eclat, though in
‘ itself no more than a successful blunder, my uniform

‘conduct and care have passed unnoticed, and I remain
‘a lieutenant still.’

The circumstances of this story affected my master in the strongest manner. He took the lieutenant by the hand, and desiring him not to despair, repeated his promise of using all his interest to serve him, of the success of which he had no reason to doubt.

Nothing particular happened during our voyage. One instance, though, of my master’s conduct in his military capacity I cannot forbear mentioning, as it shows his character in the strongest light, which was, that he never interfered in the business of his officers, but if he happened to see any thing which he disapproved, instead of interposing his own authority publicly, and giving contrary orders, he always spoke privately to the officer on duty, and giving his directions under the appearance of advice, let the alteration proceed as immediately from him, by which means he spared him the pain of being found fault with before the men, and consequently lessened in their opinion. This delicacy not only endeared him to them all, but also contributed greatly to advance the service. For as every officer knew that he should have the credit or bare the blame of his own actions, they all exerted themselves with the utmost ardour; whereas, on the contrary, where a captain is continually interfering, and leaving nothing for his officers to do, they grow careless of course, and do nothing, as they know he will arrogate to himself the merit of success; if they do not even take a malignant pleasure in any miscarriage, the blame of which they have so just an opportunity of throwing upon him.

CHAP. IV.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of speaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. Chrysal’s master meets his brother. Some account of him. He represents certain matters in an odd light. Chrysal enters into his service. Conclusion of his character. Chrysal quits his service, on an uncommon occasion, for one from which he passes, in the usual course of business, into that of the general.

WHEN

WHEN we arrived at the place of our destinations we found the shore covered with an extensive encampment, and every thing wearing the appearance of the most active war. The first thing my master did was of course to wait upon the general, whose operations he was sent to assist. He met him viewing an occasional fortification, which he had caused to be raised to train his army to the method of making regular sieges and attacks; and marking out a piece of ground to be sowed with vegetables, to correct the bad effects of the salt provisions which his men had lived upon in their passage thither, and preserve them in health. The account he received from my master of the heavy loss sustained in the expedition from which he had just come, gave him visible pleasure, as it seemed to set his own conduct, which was diametrically the reverse of that observed there, in the most advantageous light.

‘I wonder,’ said he, looking around him with an air of conscious exultation, ‘how officers can reconcile it to themselves to throw away the lives of their men in such a manner! For my part, I act upon very different principles. I take care not only to give my troops an insight into all the various branches of the military art, but also to keep them in such health as may enable them to reap the advantage of their experience. There is nothing so bad in war as precipitation. It was the sole cause of the late general’s defeat and death.’—‘Yes!’ interrupted an officer who stood near, and had hearkened to him with evident impatience. ‘Delay is full as bad. Your troops want neither health nor experience to conquer every opposition they can possibly meet; and will accomplish the end they were sent upon before your cabbages are fit for them to eat, if you will but lead them against their enemies, and not give them time to retire with their effects into places whither it is impossible for an army to pursue them, while your men waste their time and spirits in the foolish parade of mock battles and sieges, till they lose their ardour with delays which can answer no end but that of protracting the war, and thereby lengthening a lucrative command.’ B 2 Such

Such an attack was quite unexpected, and struck the general with equal surprise and indignation, as it touched him in the tenderest part; however, dissembling his passion, of which he had an absolute command, ‘I would have you to know, sir,’ said he, ‘that I think it the highest assurance in you to attempt censuring my conduct, who are sent merely to execute my orders. When I ask your opinion, it will be time enough for you to give it, till then, obedience, not advice, is what I expect from you. If I did not hold it beneath me to show resentment to one so absolutely subject to my power, you should instantly find the effect of this insolence. But presume not on that protection any further, as you regard your safety. No man provokes me with impunity.’—‘N—n—nor me!’ sputtered the officer, whose temper, hot as that of the general was cool, caught fire at the faintest shadow of offence, and flamed almost to madness, as soon as rage permitted him to articulate a word, ‘Nor m—m—me. I seek no p—p—protection but my sword, with which I will v—v—vindicate my own honour, and make good what I say.—Talk to m—m—me of safety and im—p—p—punity!’—

The affair now became serious, these words striking at the general’s safety as well as his honour, and convincing him that he must support his dignity by a vigorous effort. ‘What!’ retorted he, therefore, with a tone and air of offended authority. ‘Do you menace me, too? I suppose you design to raise a mutiny in the army, but I’ll prevent that.’—Then turning to an officer who attended, ‘Take that madman away,’ continued he, ‘and put him under a guard, till he recovers his reason. Such behaviour must not go unpunished.’—Then addressing himself to my master with an affected unconcern, as above being moved by what had happened, while the other was led away speechless and convulsed with rage, he politely invited him to dinner; an honour, however, which my master declined accepting that day, as he was most impatient to see his brother, who bore a principal command in the army under the general. The meeting of these
brothers

brothers was truly affecting. The instinctive connexion of nature had been indissolubly cemented between them by the sacred bond of friendship, founded on a sense of mutual virtue.

Actuated by the same principles, they had both devoted themselves to the profession of arms, in the different services of the land and sea, as if to avoid the jealousy of rivalry, each being determined to let no competitor take the lead of him in the road to honour. Undebauched by affluence, and disdaining to waste his youth at home in luxury, when the cause of his country called for his assistance, the elder bravely came to seek for glory in these inhospitable wilds, with as much ardour as my master pursued it on his proper element, in order to earn honours, which he might transmit to his own posterity, equal to those which his brother inherited from his illustrious ancestors. When the tender enquiries of affection were reciprocally answered, my master gratified the curiosity of his brother with a particular account of his late dearly bought success, closing the black detail with some remarks on the different conduct of the general of this army which were much to his advantage.

‘ Your reflections, my dearest brother,’ answered the officer, ‘ are most just, as things appear to you. But when
‘ you have had an opportunity of seeing further, I fear you
‘ will find reason to change your sentiments, and that the
‘ delay here proceeds at bottom from the same principle
‘ with the precipitation which produced such terrible ef-
‘ fects with you, and heaven grant it produces not as bad.
‘ Interest is the object every where ; and whether that is
‘ pursued by sacrificing the forces in rash and ill-conduct-
‘ ed attempts, to gain an immediate prize, or by letting
‘ them melt away in inaction, to accumulate the profits
‘ of command, makes no difference in the end. I would
‘ not be understood from this to justify the officer for ar-
‘ raising the general’s conduct in so public and personal
‘ a manner. Such ungoverned warmth is inexcusable.
‘ Proper respect must be paid to those who bear authority
‘ or the effect of that authority ceases ; indeed, it is not to
‘ them,

‘ them, but to him who delegates the authority, the re-
‘ spect is paid. A general at the head of an army repre-
‘ sents his sovereign in the plenitude of his power, and to
‘ suffer any slight to be shown to his delegated character,
‘ were to betray the trust of that delegation. For this rea-
‘ son, I think his punishment was necessary, and there-
‘ fore just: I wish I could add, that it was equally so
‘ from the injustice as from the circumstances of the ac-
‘ cusation which occasioned it; but to any one who will
‘ not shut his eyes it must appear beyond a doubt, that
‘ his great crime was speaking too much, and too plain
‘ truth; for, with all our boasted care for the preservation
‘ of the men, their distresses are such as have not left me
‘ a penny in my pocket, for I cannot shut my hand where
‘ my heart is opened. In short, I am so sick of the whole
‘ scene, that I have solicited the command of a detached
‘ party, with which I hope to show, that the native bra-
‘ very of Britons, when led with spirit, requires but lit-
‘ tle experience to enable them to conquer more formid-
‘ able foes than naked savages, led by a few wretched
‘ Frenchmen, in a condition not much better. I set out
‘ to-morrow morning, and think it a particular happiness
‘ that you have arrived time enough for me to have this
‘ interview with you.’

The rest of their conversation is not necessary to be re-
peated, as it turned upon their own domestic concerns.
This much only it is but just for me to observe, that it
showed their conduct in the intercourse and relations of
private life to be as amiable as that in their public capa-
cities was exalted; and proved that moral virtue is the
best foundation for true heroism.—My master’s brother
having, in the course of their conversation, intimated his
having some present occasion for money, I here entered
into his service. You may judge I remained not long in
the possession of my new master. His brother had no soon-
er left him, than he paid me away, among a large num-
ber of my fellows, to a merchant, for some additions
which he thought it necessary to make, at his own ex-
pence, to the provisions made by the public for the sup-
port

port and comfort of his men, through the fatigues and inconveniences of a campaign in an uninhabited country. The sentiments expressed by my master, in the effusion of his soul, to his brother, showed his character in the justest light; I shall, therefore, only add, that as he acted from principles firmly established on the invariable basis of reason, there was no danger of his deviating from the path in which he set out.

So bright a prospect made it a pain for me to quit his service so suddenly; but I have since met many mortifications of the same kind, my stay being always shortest in the best hands. My continuance, though from another motive, was not much longer with my next master, the merchant, who, in the common course of soliciting permission for a ship of his to sail with a cargo that must be ruined by delay, an embargo having been laid on all the shipping in the place, in the unfathomable wisdom of the ruling powers, to promote some unintelligible plan of service, gave me to the general's clerk, from whom, in the same course of business, I came into the service of the general.

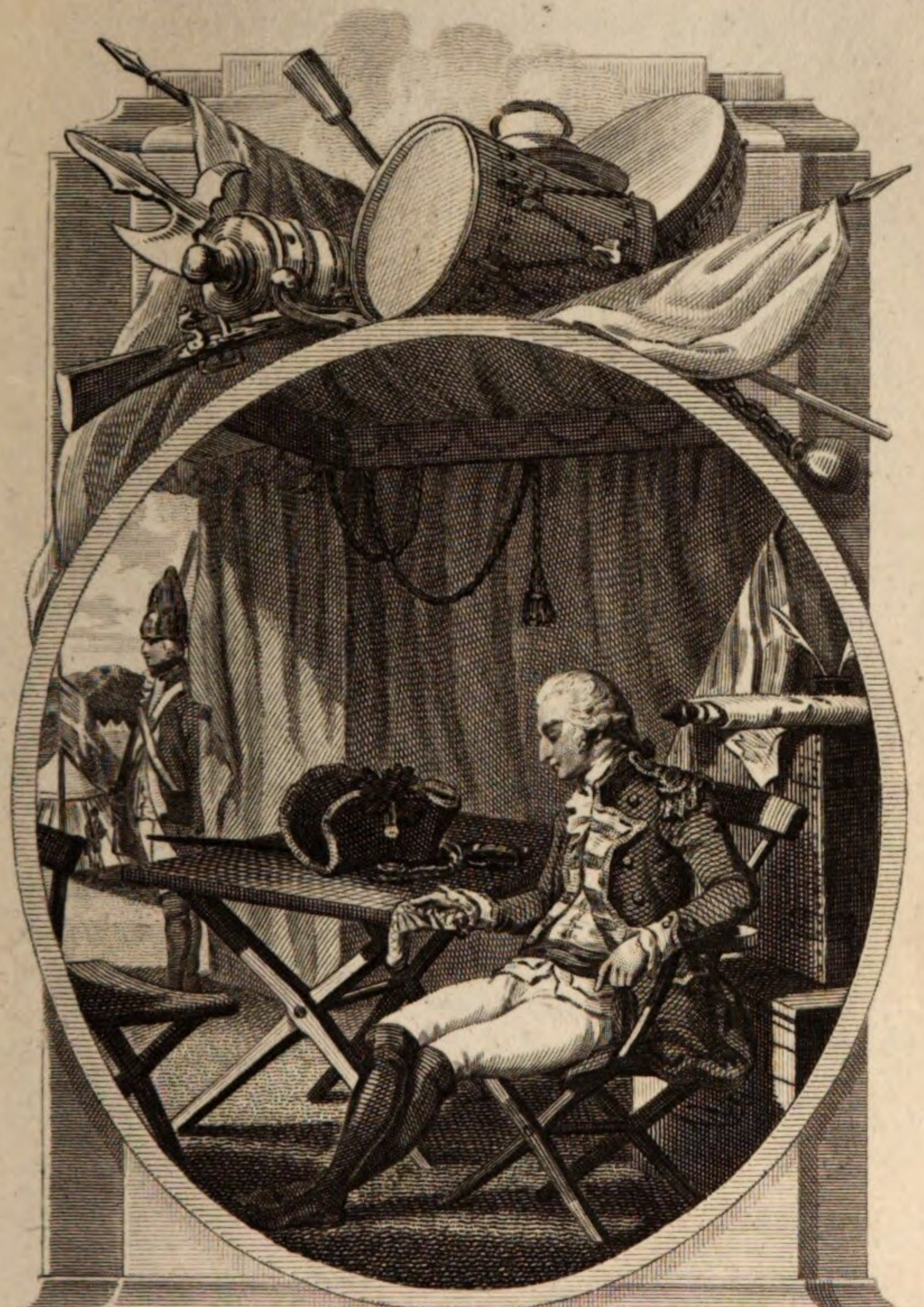
CHAP. V.

Chrysal's master makes some characteristic reflections.— He is surprised at the officer's refusing to make up matters; and gives a particular reason for some people's rising in the world. An extraordinary personage enters to him. Description of him. He gives a character of the native Americans; and offers some interesting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the closet plans of operations for armies in the field. Odd reasons why the Americans are desirous of gold. Chrysal changes his service.

WHEN I entered into the possession of my new master, he was waiting in his tent, with the most anxious impatience, for the return of a person whom he had employed to mediate, as of himself, between him and the officer, whose presumption in daring to find fault with his measures he had thought proper to punish in the manner I just now mentioned. His

His reflections on an affair that struck so dangerously at his pride and avarice, the ruling passions of his heart, could not be very agreeable; but the sight of the money gave them a pleasing turn. Having asked the clerk a few questions in the way of business, and dismissed him, he took the purse, and weighing it in his hand, 'Aye!' said he, with delight glistening in his eyes, 'this will do. This embargo was a lucky thought. Let who will complain of the hindrance it is to the business of the public, it advances mine; and that is all I care for. I came here to serve myself, and not the public; and as there is neither plunder nor contributions to be got by activity, I must try what I can do another way. I shewed my dexterity at hunting savages in the mountains of my own country, and have no desire to renew the chase here. It was necessary for me then to do something that should make me remarkable, and gain favour with those who I saw must prevail in the end, and therefore I spared no trouble or fatigue, neither friend nor foe, to convince them of my attachment; and in reward they have now given me this command, in conducting which I must use delay, to reap the advantages of my former activity. Fabius saved Rome by delay; let me but make my fortune by it, and I envy not his fame. I prefer this sound,' chinking the purse, 'to the empty noise of public acclamation, the shouts of a giddy mob, who bless and curse with the same breath, and without knowing why they do either. No! no! this is music that charms my ear.'

His meditations were broken off here by the gentleman he waited for, who informed him that the officer would come to no terms of accommodation; nor even accept of his liberty till he should be acquitted by a court-martial, and have justice done him for the affront offered to his honour. Such an account was far from being agreeable to my master, who, for obvious reasons, wished to have every thing to go as quietly as possible. After some pause, 'This is a damned affair,' said he, 'but we must now e'en make the best we can of it. Who could



Vide Volume III Page 20.
The General contemplating on the weighty
Reasons for continuing the Embargo.
Engraved for C. Cooke Sep^r 23. 1797.

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

Drawn by R. Corbould. Engraved by C. Warren.

‘ could have thought that a countryman of my own would
‘ have proved so refractory. We have always been re-
‘ markable for hanging well together. *One and all* was
‘ the word, or we could never have done such great mat-
‘ ters. If it is once found out that we can be divided,
‘ we shall soon lose our consequence, and every man be
‘ reduced to *the poor prospect of depending on his own me-
‘ rit*. However, since he will not accept of his liberty
‘ here, he shall e’en go home a prisoner, and recover it
‘ there as well as he can. I am on the right side; and
‘ don’t fear but my friends will bring me through more
‘ than this; especially, as it is a national concern to us
‘ all alike. In the mean time we must double our dili-
‘ gence to make hay while the sun shines.’

The gentleman, who was in all his secrets, acknow-
ledged the force of his reasoning; and was going to com-
municate to him some new strokes of management, when
word was brought my master, that a person to whom he
could not properly be denied, desired to see him. There
was something in the whole appearance of this person that
struck me with the strongest curiosity the moment I saw
him. His stature, above the common size of man, was
formed with the justest proportion, and denoted ability
to execute the most difficult attempts, which the deter-
mined and enterprising spirit that animated his looks could
urge him to. His open countenance, in which huma-
nity and reason attempered resolution, shewed the genuine
workings of his soul; and his whole deportment was in
the unaffected ease of natural liberty, above the hypocri-
tical formality of studied rules of behaviour, devised only
to deceive.

As soon as he entered, ‘ I am come, Sir,’ said he,
throwing himself carelessly into a chair, and cutting short
all that parade of ceremony, on the punctilious observa-
tion of which my master prided himself not a little, ‘ to
‘ receive your orders. It is time I should join my peo-
‘ ple, who grow impatient, as the enemy have begun to
‘ stir; and I never choose to baulk their first ardour.—
‘ There is nothing like taking men in the humour to
‘ fight,

‘fight, and before they have time to consider too much about it.’—

‘I design, Sir,’ answered my master, with a solemnity and affectation of politeness, which made the strongest contrast to the blunt freedom of the other, ‘to call a council of war very soon, at which I shall be glad of your assistance, to form a plan of operations for the campaign. When that is done, and all proper measures concerted, you shall set out. Precipitation is very dangerous, and directly contrary to the principles of the *regular art of war*, by which I mean to proceed. The savages shall find some difference between my conduct and that of my predecessors. They shan’t surprise me on my march; nor draw me into an ambush, among woods and mountains.’—‘As to the art of war, Sir,’ replied the other, ‘I know no more of it than what heaven and common sense have taught me, which is, to find out the enemy, and beat them as soon as I can, my plan for which is always directed by present circumstances; nor do I know how one can be formed to effect, any other way.’

‘Your exploits have always been well executed,’ returned my master, with an air and tone of importance, as designing to say something that should raise him in the opinion of the other, ‘but you have hitherto acted rather in the low sphere of a *partisan*, than as a general. The duty of a general comprehends much more than what you mention, as you shall have an opportunity of learning before we take the field. I intend to go through a regular course of military operations, to instruct my officers, and discipline the men. Your *heaven-taught* generals may beat the enemy, but that is the least part of the care and duty of a general now a-days. The very least part.’—‘And pray, Sir, how much time will this course of operations take up?’—‘I cannot exactly say; but not above a month or two, I imagine.’—‘A month or two! why, Sir, I hope we shall have done the most troublesome part of our work by that time; or else I do not know what may be the consequence.’

‘sequence. For, to be plain with you, these delays will
‘never do with the uncivilized Americans, who judge of
‘things only by common sense ; and cannot be made to
‘comprehend this way of carrying on a war, by lying
‘still in a camp, and doing nothing. They have formed
‘very disadvantageous notions of the delays already made;
‘and think a man who does not advance to fight his
‘enemy, is afraid of him ; and, therefore, if they are
‘not led to action directly, they will desert ; so that, if
‘I stay a month or two here at school, to learn a lesson
‘I may never have occasion for, I must find other forces
‘to put it in practice with.’—

‘Cannot you devise any reason that may account for
‘your staying, to their satisfaction?’—‘Really, sir, not
‘I ! I never was good at devising reasons, destitute of
‘truth, in my life ; and have entirely forgot the practice
‘since I have conversed with the Americans, who are far
‘from being such fools as they are too generally thought
‘to be. Though they have not the advantages of learn-
‘ing, they see by the light of natural reason through all
‘the boasted wiles of policy ; and, as they never mean
‘deceit themselves, detest it in others, however speciously
‘disguised ; nor ever place confidence a second time,
‘where it has been once abused.’—‘How ! the Ameri-
‘cans never mean deceit ! Surely, you must know better !
‘they are the most perfidious, deceitful savages that bur-
‘then the earth ; and it would be an advantage to the
‘world, if the whole race of them was exterminated.’

‘Such of them as converse much with civilized Eu-
‘ropeans, it is too true, learn many things from them,
‘which are a disgrace to their own savage nature, as you
‘call it. But I speak of the general disposition of the
‘people. Treat them with candour, probity, and ten-
‘derness, and they will return them tenfold, in all their
‘intercourse with you ; as, on the other hand, they sel-
‘dom fail to retort the contrary treatment with severe
‘usury. Nor are they to be blamed. In all their dealings
‘with the Europeans they find themselves imposed upon
‘in the grossest manner ; in a manner not fit to be prac-
tised,

‘tified even with brutes. Their sensibility is quick, and
‘their passions ungoverned; perhaps, ungovernable: how
‘then can it be wondered at, that they make returns in
‘kind, whenever they find opportunity, and become the
‘most dangerous enemies? Whereas, if those passions
‘were attached by good treatment, they would be the
‘most affectionate, steady, and careful friends. I speak
‘from experience. I treat them as rational creatures; and
‘they behave as such to me. I never deceive them; and
‘they never deceive me. I do them all the good offices
‘in my power; and they return them manyfold. In
‘short, I practise to them the behaviour which I wish to
‘meet from them, and am never disappointed. All the
‘evils which have been suffered from them have proceeded
‘from the unhappy error of thinking ourselves possessed
‘of a superiority over them, which nature, that is, hea-
‘ven, has not given us. They are our fellow-creatures;
‘and in general above our level in the virtues which give
‘real pre-eminence, however despicably we think of, and
‘injuriously we treat them.’—

‘They are much obliged to your character of them at
‘least; whatever others may be. And pray, sir, what
‘is it you would have me do, to preserve the good opi-
‘nion of these most virtuous people?’—‘I presume not,
‘sir, to say what is proper for you to do. All my desire
‘is, that you will dismiss me directly, in a capacity of
‘making good my promises to my friends; and, by the
‘time you say you shall be ready to move with your ar-
‘my, I hope to give a good account of the enemy.’—
‘That, sir, I have no thought of. However, as you are
‘so desirous of going, I shall not delay you. I’ll form
‘a plan of operations for you this very day.’—

‘For me, sir? I do not understand you. How can
‘you know what will be proper or possible for me to do,
‘at the distance of many hundred miles, in a country
‘you are an utter stranger to. In Europe, where war,
‘like a game at chess, is played, as I may say, entirely
‘by art, that method of planning in the closet the ope-
‘rations of the field may do, perhaps; but then it is
‘necessary

‘ necessary that each side should play the game by the
‘ same rules. A body of Americans, who know nothing
‘ of the art of war but fighting, might be apt to move so
‘ irregularly, as to disconcert the whole scheme of the
‘ game. Indeed, by what I can judge of the matter,
‘ that very method of planning the operations of a cam-
‘ paign is advantageous only to the general, as it prolongs
‘ the war, and consequently the emoluments of command,
‘ by tying up his hand from availing himself of any un-
‘ foreseen circumstances in his favour. Whereas, if ar-
‘ mies were sent out only to fight, as formerly, before the
‘ improvements in the art of war, the dispute would soon
‘ be decided, and even the vanquished better off than the
‘ victors are at present, whose riches and strength are so
‘ exhausted, by this dilatory way of proceeding, that they
‘ are not the better for their success. I hope, sir, you do
‘ not take offence at the plainness of my speech. I have
‘ so long been accustomed to converse with savages,
‘ who speak just what they think, that I am become
‘ quite a stranger to that dissimulation which is called
‘ politeness among civilized nations, and must make use
‘ of words in their original intention of conveying my
‘ thoughts.’—

‘ Not in the least, sir! I like your free manner much.
‘ It is in the character of a soldier. I will order every
‘ thing to be got ready for you directly; and you shall go
‘ as soon as you please, at full liberty to act as you shall
‘ see proper.’—‘ I hope, sir, I shall not make a bad use
‘ of that liberty. And, pray, among the other things,
‘ do not forget to order me some money.’—

‘ Money, sir! What occasion can you possibly have for
‘ money, among savages, who do not know the value of
‘ it?’—‘ Why really, sir, that question is natural. But
‘ the matter is, the savages, who come among Europeans,
‘ see every thing governed by gold, in such a manner,
‘ that they have taken it into their heads we worship it;
‘ and, therefore, are become as eager for it as ourselves,
‘ in hopes of gaining an ascendancy over us, when they
‘ have got our god in their possession.’ A con-

A conscious heart takes to itself more than was ever meant. The dry manner in which this was said touched my master to the quick, and made him not desire to pursue the conversation any farther with such a free speaker, nor have so nice an observer longer about him, to pry into the motives of his actions. Giving him, therefore, the money he required, he wished him success, with a forced politeness, and dismissed him to prepare for his departure.

It was a pleasure to me to change my service on this occasion; as the idea I had conceived of my new master, both from his appearance and conversation, promised me some variety, and my curiosity was heartily surfeited with the regular art of war.

CHAP. VI.

The manner in which Chrysal's master was received by his subjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in some important matters, with the consequences.

AS soon as every thing was ready, my master set out for home, where he arrived without meeting any thing remarkable in his journey, as you may suppose, through uninhabited deserts. The reception he met with from his people was the very reverse of what *sovereigns* usually meet. They welcomed him with sincere joy and respect, which they expressed in the overflowing of their hearts, without ceremony or parade: I say '*sovereigns*,' as he really enjoyed that power in its most rational sense, his will being a law to all around him, *because they always found it just, and advantageous to them.* Though the account which he gave my late master of his manner of treating his people showed a just foundation for his power over them, I found that it depended not on that alone. His authority, like that of the first rulers of the earth, was founded also on the relations of nature, and supported by its strongest ties, he being literally the father of his subjects, the king of his own family. To explain this it is necessary to inform you, that on his fixing his residence among these *uncivilized* nations, in order to gain an influence over them the more readily, he

had

had laid aside all such rules of conduct as seemed to him to be contradictory to natural reason, and the public good, however forcibly enjoined for particular convenience. Among these, the chief was, the custom of restraining the commerce between the sexes, and confining individuals to each other, after the desire which first brought them together had ceased: As he saw that the strongest passion which governs the human heart is that desire, (for his philosophy was not refined enough to suggest one thought of governing the passions) and as the continuation of the species depends entirely on the gratification of it, he held every opposition to it to be most criminal in itself, and detrimental to the public good, (properly the first object of every civil institution, and which can be promoted no way so effectually as by promoting population) and therefore exerted all his influence to encourage that commerce, under such restrictions only, as were evidently necessary to procure the great end of it, the propagation of the species. He gave liberty to every man to converse with as many females as he pleased, and to quit them whenever he thought proper, provided they were not pregnant. To the women the former liberty could not be extended, as the use of it would defeat the design; or, where it had not immediately that effect, cause confusion, and prevent both paternal care and filial duty, by the uncertainty of descent: but the latter instance they enjoyed equally with the men, being allowed to choose whom they liked, and if not pregnant quit them at pleasure, for others, without reproach or shame, the offspring of all which connexions were to remain with the fathers.

I shall not say whether reason originally suggested this system to him, or (as is often the case) whether he sought for reasons to support the dictates of inclination. Be it which it would, the effect was the same. His subjects increased in an uncommon degree; and he founded, like the patriarchs of old, an authority on the justest of all principles, voluntary consent, over a people inseparably linked to him, and to each other, by the strongest ties of

nature, as being, by this complicated commerce, in the strictest sense one family; for, disdaining to make laws for others, which he would not observe himself (like too many of his brother legislators) he had enforced his precepts so powerfully by his example, that there was scarce a house in any of the tribes around him, from which he had not taken a temporary mate, and added a child of his to their number. That his reception, as I observed, should be most cordial from such subjects is not to be wondered at. They flocked about him on his arrival, and hailed him with one voice by every tender relation of nature; brother, father, son, husband, showed an affection too sublime to be expressed by formal rules, and impossible to be seen without sympathising in it. When this tribute was paid to nature, he called the elders of the people together, and distributing among them the presents which he had received for that purpose, gave them an account of the mighty army sent by his sovereign against the enemy, and proposed to them to assist its operations.

There required not many arguments to confirm their confidence, in one who had never deceived them. They readily and sincerely assented to his proposal, and sending to invite all their neighbours to join them, separated to make the very little preparations necessary for persons who were strangers to luxury, and knew no wants but those of nature.

CHAP. VII.

Chrysal describes his master's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progress. The manner in which he found the females of his household engaged. Remarks on finery. Account of their amusements, with the manner in which they usually ended. The method by which Chrysal's master kept peace in his family.

AS soon as my master had thus concluded the business of his public character, he retired to devote a few minutes to his domestic concerns.

His habitation was built on an eminence, by the side of a rivulet, the banks of which were covered with a number of neat little cottages, inhabited by the females of
of

of his present family ; for, instead of attempting to prevent their quitting him for other men, as inclination led them, he not only always dismissed them with presents in the most friendly manner, but also kept up an intercourse of regard with them and their successive husbands, every one of whom he attached to himself in the strongest manner, being particularly ready, on all occasions, to do them every good office in his power. In these cottages they bred up their children, and enjoyed from his care all the necessaries of life with more convenience and comfort than they could possibly have experienced among their own people, unimbittered by any of those jealousies and feuds which such a situation might seem to threaten ; so equally did he dispense his favours among them. When he had given some orders in his house, he walked out to visit his family, and enjoy the sublimest instance of the happiness of power, in making all who were subject to it happy, by the unaffected tenderness with which he enquired after their welfare, and returned their caresses, on his entering every cottage.

The appearance of these females was most different from the delicate sensibility that softened the beauties of Amelia,* the fire which animated the charms of Olivia ;† but custom, that reconciles all things, had made them agreeable to him, especially as no comparison could there be made to their disadvantage, and the honest readiness with which they met his addresses, the warmth with which they shared his joy, amply over-balanced any imaginary defect in feature or complexion ; any ignorance of those affected arts of coyness, which, over-acted, often pall the taste for long expected pleasure.

As his women did not expect his visit so soon, he found them engaged, according to their different inclinations, either in the management of their domestic œconomy, or in such amusements as custom had made pleasing to them. The occupations of the former kind were necessarily confined within a narrow circle, from the circumstances of their lives ; but in the latter, fancy, sole sovereign of the

See Vol. I.---Page 25.

† Vol. II.---Page 219.

scene, asserted her unbounded rule, and sported in variety of forms, many of which I soon had an opportunity of seeing. As my master proceeded in his patriarchal progress, he met a considerable number of the females of his family, with such of the neighbouring men, as from age or idleness were unfit for more useful employments, assembled together under a spreading tree that grew before the door of one of their cottages, dressed out in their gayest apparel, and engaged in different kinds of diversions. At the sight of him they all arose, and would have desisted, but he prevented them, and not only made them resume their sports, but also sat down himself in the midst of the company, to be a spectator of them.

It seems it was a custom among them to meet frequently thus, at each other's cottages, for the pleasure of enjoying their favourite amusements to more advantage together, and displaying their finery, to set off which, no art nor care was neglected on these occasions. They dressed themselves in their best blankets, which were covered all over with patches of various colours, to make them look more gaudy. Their heads were adorned with plumes of feathers. Strings of glass-beads were rolled round their arms and legs. Their toes were loaded with rings of pewter and brass; and their necks and faces were carved with figures of birds and flowers, and painted of various hues. I see your laughter moved at this description; but that proceeds from narrow prejudice, and want of rational reflection, on which it would appear that all useless ornaments are equally just objects of ridicule, whether made of silks and laces, or party-coloured rags; whether bits of glass, or pearls and diamonds. Think, I say, but for a moment; and you will see that in reality there is nothing more absurd in wearing one kind of metal, or upon one part of the body, than another; rings of brass, for instance, on the toes, than golden on the fingers; in carving the skin, than boring the ears; or in painting the face blue and green, than white and red. The same vanity is the motive of all, and all produce the same effect of admiration; as, in things equally unsupported by reason,

son, custom and caprice bear equal sway. The difference in the means, therefore, makes none in the end; at least none to the disadvantage of the persons of whom I speak, as it certainly is more absurd to lavish treasures, that might be so much better employed, to a worthless purpose, while cheaper baubles would answer as well.

The amusements in which they were engaged, were as whimsical as their dresses. Some skipped about, describing various figures in their motions, till want of breath and weariness obliged them to sit down. Others, and these the greatest number, were employed in chucking shells, or pebbles from the brook, into holes dug in the sand, for prizes of bits of tin or brass, which game they applied themselves to with the greatest eagerness and anxiety, and many were so expert at it, as to strip their antagonists of all their hoards, often, indeed, not without the assistance of chicanery and deceit: And a few of the eldest, and those who had nothing to stake at play, gathered up and down into little sets, and entertained themselves with making remarks upon the rest, not always dictated by good nature or truth; while the mistress of the cottage busied herself in adjusting ceremonials, settling her company at their several amusements, and serving them with milk, or broth, and tobacco, the fatigue of which office she never repined at, as her consequence was established by the number of her guests. Though mere amusement was the obvious end of these meetings, other objects were generally pursued, and other consequences produced by them. Intrigues were commenced, and often completed; and, trifling as the prizes were for which they contended, emulation and avarice agitated the passions, and set the competitors together by the ears, till they almost clawed out each other's eyes.

Their sports were at length beginning to take their usual turn. The tempers of the losers became soured; and the detection of some *deep* strokes of play gave rise to altercations, which would soon have been followed by blows; but my master interposed his authority, and put an end to their disputes, when the party broke up; some
retiring

retiring to keep the assignations they had made in the warmth of their inclinations, and the rest to calculate their winnings, and devise schemes for retrieving their losses, at their next meeting; and my master having singled out the happy favourite of that night, repaired with her to his own habitation, without any of the rest taking offence or even particular notice of the preference, as they had it in their power to supply their loss elsewhere.

I have observed your astonishment at this whole scene, especially at my master's hardness in expecting to be happy among a number of women, and attempting to keep them in order together, when one, in your opinion, is more than any man can manage: but what will it be, when I tell you that that number often amounted to hundreds; and that he had never recourse to any kind of severity, in his conduct to them? To comprehend this, it is necessary for you to consider, that most of, if not not all, the uneasinesses which imbitter the life of man arise from an officious intrusion into the uneasinesses of others, or an over-weening partiality to himself, that makes him expect treatment, which he does not give, and take offence where none is meant him, for matters not worth his being offended at—an observation that will hold in every state, public and private; among governors, as well as governed. His rule, then, was never to take part in their disputes among themselves, nor offence at their infidelity to his bed, of which he himself set the example. This disarmed them of that *perverseness, which is the sex's most offensive weapon*. They remained constant to him, because they were not restrained from being otherwise, whenever they pleased; nor did they trouble him with their disputes, because they saw he would not be troubled at them.

CHAP. VIII.

Chrysal's master is honourably rewarded for his services. An unexpected meeting with one of his country-women introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd instance of conjugal love; and refuses the civil offer of Chrysal's master, for a natural reason. Chrysal changes his service.

THE



ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.
The European Lady, discovered in the woods
by a frouting party of the native Americans
Vide Vol. III. Chap. 8. Page 83.

THE very next morning his people assembled before his door, in readiness to obey his commands, when he led them directly in quest of the enemy, sharing himself in all their fatigues, and teaching them to despise danger by his example ; so little did he know of the duty of a general. It would be tiresome to enter into a particular description of an expedition carried on among wildernesses and deserts, and consisting chiefly of ambuscades and surprises. It is sufficient to say, that he was successful in all his enterprises, reason and presence of mind serving him instead of experience in the regular art of war, and courage well supplying the place of discipline in his men. Such services could not miss of reward from a just and judicious sovereign. His power was enlarged ; and he received those marks of favour and distinction which were originally instituted to excite virtuous emulation, and set the seal of honour on successful merit ; though, like most other human institutions, they too often produce the contrary effect, and reflect only disgrace from being bestowed contrary to their intention, and on unworthy objects.

As he was preparing the way thus for the motions of the main army, whenever the general should think proper to let it move, some of his people brought before him an European lady whom they found wandering in those unfrequented wilds, her guide having mistaken his way.

Such a situation necessarily entitled her to his compassion and assistance ; but he soon found himself still further interested in her favour, when he found she was a native of his own country, and of a family not entirely unknown to him, before he came to fix his abode in this distant part of the world.

There is not a stronger instance of the force of that attachment, called in a larger sense patriotism, than the instinctive affection which persons of the same country, though utterly unacquainted before, feel for each other the moment they meet in a strange place. My master instantly called her his dear country-woman, and embracing her with the tenderness of a brother, led her away to his
own

own tent, which he resigned to her, as the best accommodation he could give her; and then went and ordered every thing that had belonged to her, which his men looking upon as fair prize had taken and divided among themselves, to be restored, promising to recompense the captors himself.

As soon as she had adjusted her appearance in some better manner, she sent to desire my master's company, for he had told her that he should not come without permission, for fear of intruding improperly upon her; and on his expressing wonder what could have brought her thus into the midst of these deserts, so far away from every European settlement, she gratified his curiosity with the following account, which was often interrupted by sighs, tears, and every expression of the most poignant grief: Her husband, she said, who had been an officer of distinguished rank in the English forces, had fallen in one of the defeats they suffered in the beginning of the war, before England had exerted herself in such a manner, as to entitle her to success; the news of whose death affected her so extraordinarily, that she resolved to brave all the fatigues and dangers of so long a voyage by sea, and journey through uninhabited deserts in time of war, for the melancholy pleasure of one last view of his dear remains, which she had accordingly obtained, though not so much to her satisfaction as she could have wished, the body being in a state of putrefaction, not possible to be approached without disgust and abhorrence, nor to be distinguished from any other mass of corruption, when she had caused it to be dug out of the grave in which it had been buried, on the spot where he had been killed, among the other victims of the day; and was now returning home, when she had happily been found by his people. Though my master was as much unversed in the regular rules of politeness, as of war, good-nature taught him the essentials of one, as reason had of the other. He heard out her story, though not without pity and contempt at the extravagance and folly of it; and, consoling her with some general remarks on the error of indulging immoderate
grief

grief for things not to be remedied, offered to send her under a sufficient escort to his own habitation, where she might remain in safety, and have the conversation and attendance of his women, till the conclusion of the campaign, when he would convey her himself to the next seaport, in order to her returning to her own country. Though she would have looked upon any attempt to console her as the highest affront in another situation, her present circumstances made her think it not proper to show any resentment of it to him: besides, there was something in his appearance, that somehow made it less disagreeable from him than it would have been from any other person; and would possibly have influenced her to accept of his offer, had not the mention of his women alarmed her delicacy, and set her virtue on its guard.

Resolving, therefore, to have this cleared up, before she would give any direct answer to his offer, she expressed her high sense of his kindness in the politest terms; and entering into a general conversation, among other questions of mere curiosity, asked him, in a careless manner, whom he meant by *his women*, and in what capacity they served him?

Such a question was more than he desired, though he had inconsiderately laid himself open to it. However, as he thought no delicacy could justify deceit, he answered her directly, and without preface, that they served him in the natural capacity of women, while they pleased to continue with him; nor did he desire any other service from them.

Though she was a good deal disconcerted at this answer, she had the address not to seem to understand it, in hopes that he would take the hint, and explain himself into a meaning less offensive to her modesty; to give an opportunity for which, ‘I presume sir,’ replied she, ‘you mean that they wait upon your lady, or perform the other domestic offices of your family, in which women servants only are employed?’—‘No, really, madam,’ answered he, ‘that was not my meaning. I have no lady for them to wait upon; nor do they live so immediately

‘diately in my own family, as to have any domestic employment in it.’—‘How, sir! Are you not married?’—‘Not particularly to any one person, madam.’—‘That’s very strange!’ said she, pleased at having gained so material a piece of intelligence, and resolving to pursue the conversation. ‘That is really very strange. And pray sir, are these ladies Europeans? I suppose,’ sighing heavily and wiping her eyes, ‘they are the unhappy widows of such officers as are fallen in the service, to whom you have shown the same politeness and humanity, as I now experience from you.’

‘I am sorry madam,’ answered he, to satisfy her curiosity at once, and put a stop to questions which began to be troublesome, ‘to be obliged to undeceive you in an opinion so favourable to me; they are all native Americans, by whom I have had children; and in whose unfeigned affection, and easy complying tempers, I find such satisfaction, that I never shall quit them to attach myself solely to any one woman, however superior to them in the advantages of beauty and education; not, indeed, that they want qualifications to raise both love and esteem, which you will find when you have been some time among them.’

This, which was too plain for her to affect not to understand, instantly put an end to the pleasure she had begun to find in his conversation, and determined her as to his proposal. ‘I am much obliged to you for your civil offer, Sir,’ said she, bridling up her chin, and making him a formal curtesy, ‘but I cannot accept of it: I have not the least desire for the conversation of *squaws*, and am in haste to leave this savage place; for which reason I shall take it as a favour if you will send some of your people to guard me to the next English settlement, to-morrow morning. At present I am quite exhausted with fatigue, and want some rest, if the distress of my heart will permit me to take any.’

This thought recalled the remembrance of her loss: She burst into a flood of tears, and my master withdrew,
after

after finding that his attempts to console her only aggravated her grief, and gave offence to her delicacy.

Unversed as he was in the arts of the polite world, he was too well acquainted with the ruling principles of the sex, which in every state are the same, not to see through this change in her behaviour; but the discovery had no other effect than to confirm him in his contempt for such hypocritical levity. Accordingly, finding she continued in the same mind next morning, he made the best provision he could for her journey, and sent her away with a sufficient guard, forcing upon her a purse of gold, in which I was, to defray any accidental expence, for which she might be unprovided, in case she should not directly meet a ship, ready to carry her to Europe.

CHAP. IX.

Chrysal's mistress gives some striking instances of female consistency. She is cured of her grief by a person of accomplishments as extraordinary as her own. The advantages of comparative excellence. Chrysal's mistress marries, and he changes his service for that of an old master.

AS soon as my mistress found herself out of the sight of my late master, she gave vent to that indignation and rage of disappointment which she had thought proper to suppress while in his presence. ‘Insensible brute!’ said she, ‘Not quit his odious *squaws* for any woman! And to have the rudeness to tell me so to my face! It shows his gross, low taste, for which such animals are fittest.’

Then pausing for some moments: ‘What a charming figure!’ continued she, sighing softly, ‘Such a size! Such strength and ease in every motion! And then the manly beauty in his looks! Had I but the polishing of him! I was too hasty—I should have waited to insinuate myself into his heart by degrees. I could not have failed of success. My husband was as strongly attached to another when first I undertook him. Oh! dearest, best of men! never shall I meet your fellow! Never shall another possess your place in this faithful, wretched heart.’—

A flood

A flood of tears here interrupted her meditations, which were often renewed in the same strain during her journey, and always ended the same way. On her arrival at the sea-port, she had the mortification to find that she must wait some time for a passage home, all the ships which were there having sailed a few days before. But her vexation at this disappointment was considerably lightened by the conversation of several companions in it, particularly that of a chaplain of a regiment, who had taken such offence at the immorality of the army, and the uncomfortable way of living in those savage countries, that he had hired a substitute, at a cheap rate, to do his duty, and was returning home to enjoy a life more agreeable to the delicacy of his character and inclinations, and exert his talents to more advantage in paying court to his patrons, than in reforming soldiers, or converting savages. Extremes are never lasting: the violence of my mistress's grief had been too much for nature to support and was beginning to abate of itself, when my late master awoke another passion, that would soon have supplanted it; and though he did not pursue his advantage as far as he might have done, he had opened her heart, and inspired a warmth ready to receive any other impression. As the chaplain's function and her rank, not to omit the accomplishments of both, seemed to point them to each other as the most proper companions, it was not strange that they should soon grow intimate, nor that their intimacy should be insensibly improved into a tenderer passion. They made *tête-à-tête* parties, at games which no one else in the place knew how to play with them.— They talked of all the places of pleasurable resort in England, and of the amusements pursued at them: and they raised their own consequence in the eyes of each other, by boasting of acquaintances with persons they knew only by name.

Such uncommon accomplishments were not without effect. Each took the tales of the other upon credit, because their own met the same complaisance, and found a pleasure in being deceived by one whom it was an equal pleasure

sure to deceive. But this was not the only thing that advanced their mutual influence upon each other. All human excellence is but comparative. Though far from being beautiful, they were the nearest to being so; though far from being well-bred, they knew most of the common ceremonies in which good-breeding is by many thought to consist, (but which really are the incumbrances of it) of any persons there; and consequently appeared to enjoy those advantages in the highest degree. They regulated the assemblies, they laid down the rules of play, they made fashions; in a word, their opinion was the law in every matter of polite amusement and concern.

Thus *cut out* for each other, it was impossible for this accomplished pair not to come together. They were accordingly married, not more to the grief of their respective admirers, than the joy of their rivals, the bride forgetting her grief for a dead, in the arms of a living husband, and the happy bridegroom pleasing himself with the thought, that the high accomplishments of his lady would increase his interest with his noble patrons. To crown their happiness, a few days after they were married, an English man of war put in there, in its way home, the captain of which politely offered them their passage. Such an opportunity was not to be missed: they accepted his offer with the greatest joy, and in return made a *party* and entertainment for him, when he won me from my mistress at a game of *brag*, the only game, indeed, at which he thought himself a match for her.

Though I had no reason to regret leaving her service, my present change gave me no great pleasure, as it wanted even the recommendation of novelty, my new master being the captain with whom I had the last time left the Spanish coast, and who had at length been made so happy as to be ordered home.

CHAP. X.

Chrysal again arrives in England. His master is saluted by a sight not very pleasing. The history of the unfortunate hero of the day opens some mysterious scenes. The obvious use of councils of war.

THE

THE arrival of my master in England presented him with a scene that made him wish he had not been in such haste to return. On his entering the harbour, he found the boats of all the men of war there drawn up around one ship, in which was displayed the dreadful signal of the execution of the commander. The sight appalled his soul, conscience anticipating the stroke of justice, and taking this as an omen of his own fate. He had not time to brood over these gloomy reflections long, when an officer came on board him, with an order to attend the execution in his boat, along with the other captains, which he obeyed, in a state of mind scarce less unhappy than that of the criminal. As soon as the *bloody work* was done, he waited on the chief commander, where the melancholy in every face he met was far from relieving the anxiety of his mind. He could have no pleasure in such company. When he had answered a few general questions of course, he went away to the ship of a captain of his intimate acquaintance, to learn some account of this shocking scene, for he had not had resolution to make an inquiry about it; nor even to attend to the conversation of every one around him, which would have explained the whole.

After mutual congratulations on their meeting, my master signified his curiosity, which his friend promised to gratify over their bottle, as soon as they should be alone after dinner. Accordingly, when the coast was clear, 'You desire information in an affair,' said he, 'that has given our corps the deepest wound we have ever received. The circumstances are many, and mysterious; but I will strive to give you a notion of it in as few words as possible, for it can be no pleasure to either of us to dwell upon such a subject. In the beginning of the war, soon after you went to America, the unfortunate man, who has this day fallen a sacrifice to the humour of the times, was sent out with a fleet, to counteract the schemes of the enemy, and relieve a fortress of our's which they were then besieging. This was the purport of his public orders; but it will appear to you presently,

presently, that he must have received private ones, of a very different nature, from those who, at that time, had the conduct of affairs. Instead of making the expedition necessary to have carried his orders into execution with effect, he trifled away the time here in such a shameful manner, using every frivolous excuse he could devise, to delay his departure, that the voice of the public was raised against him; and it was found necessary to appoint another to the command in his place, in order to silence their clamours; but, unfortunately for him, he failed the very day before his appointed successor was to have set out to supersede him. The same dilatory conduct threw a damp upon every thing he attempted to do. He seemed resolved upon nothing; but though he was invested with the fullest powers to act as he saw proper himself, called councils of war to deliberate upon every the most trifling occasion, that he might have the sanction of their advice, to excuse his neglect, and often direct disobedience of his orders; for you well know, that a council of war always speaks the sense of the commander.

One instance of his proceeding in this manner will be sufficient to justify this remark. He had been ordered to call at another fortress in his way, and take from thence a re-enforcement for the garrison of that which he was sent to relieve: On his arrival there, instead of demanding that re-enforcement peremptorily, as his orders empowered him, and making the expedition which the urgency of the occasion required, he showed such indifference to the enterprise by his delays, and expressed such diffidence of his success, that the commanding officer took the alarm; and, following his example, called a council of war, to consider, whether he should send it, which, on mature deliberation, he absolutely refused, on account of the danger of weakening his own garrison, in case it should be attacked; whereas, it was notorious, that could never happen, if this unhappy man did his duty, as the force he had was sufficient to keep the command of the sea, and prevent any such attempt. But,

‘ far from urging this, he quietly acquiesced in the officer’s
‘ excuse, and sailed away without the re-enforcement, for
‘ which alone he had been ordered to stop there. On the
‘ same principles, when at length he came in sight of the
‘ place, the siege of which was pushed with the greatest
‘ vigour, he excused his sending any relief to it, on a pre-
‘ tence of the danger of entering the harbour, as if any
‘ military operations could be free from danger, and sail-
‘ ed away to seek a fleet of the enemies, which was com-
‘ ing to assist the siege, and which he came up with sooner
‘ than he wished.

‘ An engagement now was unavoidable but, still he
‘ had it in his power to prevent any effect from it, which
‘ he notoriously did, by trifling away his time in vain,
‘ unnecessary *manœuvres*, and pretending to come to ac-
‘ tion at a distance too great for him to do any thing. The
‘ enemy, whose interest it was to avoid an engagement,
‘ in which their most sanguine hopes could not promise
‘ them success, availed themselves of this conduct, and
‘ made their escape, after having, from the superiority
‘ which his *keeping aloof* in this manner gave them, treat-
‘ ed very roughly a part of his fleet, that had advanced
‘ with caution, and come really to action. This served
‘ him as a pretence for calling a council of war next day,
‘ by the advice of which, instead of pursuing the enemy,
‘ who had evidently fled from him, or making any at-
‘ tempt to relieve the fortress which was besieged, obvi-
‘ ously the first object of his being sent out, he returned
‘ directly to the other, from which he was to have taken
‘ the re-enforcement, as I mentioned before, to defend
‘ that from the danger brought upon it solely by his own
‘ conduct, leaving the former, deprived thus of every pro-
‘ spect of relief, to take its fate; and giving up the ho-
‘ nour of his country, by flying from an enemy whom he
‘ might have vanquished, and who had fled from him be-
‘ fore.’

CHAP.

CHAP XI.

Continued. Consequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary sentence attempted to be reversed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary persons. The reason of this ; and why it miscarried. More mysteries. Just fate of the bunglers, who left their poor tool in the lurch ; with the consequences of this affair to a certain corps.

‘ THE consequence of so strange a conduct was, the
 ‘ nation took fire ; and with one voice demanded
 ‘ satisfaction for such a sacrifice of their interest and ho-
 ‘ nour. He was, therefore, not only deprived of his com-
 ‘ mand, but also sent home a prisoner ; and after suffering
 ‘ every indignity and abuse which the rage of a licentious
 ‘ populace, broken loose from all bounds, could suggest,
 ‘ brought to his trial, found guilty of *neglecting to do all*
 ‘ *in his power to destroy the enemy*, and for that crime has
 ‘ this day suffered the sentence of the law—a sentence not
 ‘ more unexpected by him, and extraordinary in itself,
 ‘ than in the manner it was passed ; and afterwards at-
 ‘ tempted to be reversed by those who had passed it, when
 ‘ they reflected on the danger of establishing a precedent,
 ‘ that might one day come home to themselves. For, per-
 ‘ suaded, perhaps by their knowledge of the true motives
 ‘ of his conduct, that nothing more was meant by the trial
 ‘ than to amuse the public, they resolved to act their parts
 ‘ in the farce, and found him guilty, as I have said, of
 ‘ such a part only of the charge against him, as common
 ‘ sense could never conceive punishable with death, it be-
 ‘ ing impossible to acquit him absolutely of the whole,
 ‘ without involving themselves in his guilt, by which
 ‘ means they expected to save both his life and their own
 ‘ credit. But such *trimming* seldom answers ; *the tables*
 ‘ *were now turned* ; and it was resolved to carry even this
 ‘ lame sentence into execution with the utmost severity.

‘ Alarmed at a measure so contrary to their expecta-
 ‘ tions, his judges were driven to their wit’s end ; and,
 ‘ from a provident regard to *themselves*, left nothing un-
 ‘ attempted to save *him*. They retracted, as far as was
 ‘ in their power, their own judgment ! They petitioned
 ‘ the

‘ the ministry! They applied to the whole body of the
‘ legislature. They prayed! They expostulated! They
‘ wept! but all was in vain. His fate was determined;
‘ and they only drew upon themselves that contempt
‘ which such inconsistency deserved. From this general
‘ account of his conduct it must have appeared to you,
‘ that he acted by secret orders, directly opposite to his
‘ public ones, as no man, however prostituted in principle,
‘ however infatuated by fear, (neither of which, it was
‘ well known, was his case) could otherwise possibly have
‘ acted in such a manner, the inevitable consequences of
‘ which were disgrace and death. But if any doubt should
‘ remain in your mind, from the inconsistency of a man’s
‘ actions at different times, the least attention to the fol-
‘ lowing circumstances will effectually remove it. Repeated
‘ informations of the enemy’s design upon that place had
‘ been sent to those in power, for a considerable time be-
‘ fore; but no notice was taken of them to re-enforce the
‘ garrison; nor even order the officers, regularly belong-
‘ ing to it, to attend their duty, till the siege was actu-
‘ ally begun; when this unfortunate man was sent, but so
‘ late, that the common impediments of contrary winds
‘ might very possible have delayed him so long as to de-
‘ feat the design of his going, even had he exerted him-
‘ self with the greatest ardour. Had it also been really in-
‘ tended that he should re-enforce the garrison, a force
‘ proper for that purpose would have been sent directly
‘ from home, without subjecting him to the further delay
‘ of stopping for it at another place, where it might not
‘ be to be spared, as proved to be the case. And, lastly,
‘ had he not secret reasons, which he thought sufficient to
‘ justify his conduct, it is not to be imagined that he
‘ would have wasted the time before he failed; that he
‘ would have accepted the refusal of the commanding of-
‘ ficer of the fortress, from which he was to have taken
‘ the re-enforcement; that he would not have attempted at
‘ least to throw some relief into the place; and that he
‘ would not have fought the enemies fleet, when he had
‘ the fairest prospect of defeating it; for the tenor of his
‘ former

‘ former life acquitted him, as I have observed, of all suspicion of cowardice, or traitorous correspondence with the foes of his country.

‘ His conduct at and after his trial confirmed these remarks. Depending on support from those in power, he neglected the only measure prudence could have suggested for his defence, which was to have retorted the charge of his miscarriage upon his very accusers, and perplexed the cause with such a variety of matter about *disobedience to signals, and breach of discipline*, as to blind the world, and bewilder his judges, so that they should be glad to have acquitted him, if only to get rid of the plague of the inquiry; a method which experience had shown to be effectual in as flagrant a case as his. And, even after he was condemned, his behaviour proved, that he expected a pardon to the last moment, for a crime which he had committed in obedience to their orders. Why he did not produce those orders, in his vindication, must have been, that they were only verbal ones; which, in the blind lust of ministerial confidence and favour, he had been weak enough to take. The reason of his being so basely deserted is too obvious. The administration of those who had employed him had been such a series of blunders (not to call it by a severer name!) that they had not only been supplanted by another set, who promised better things, but were also obliged to give him up, *as a sin offering*, to the rage of the people; as protecting or pardoning him would have implied a participation of his guilt: And in this light the other party viewed it so strongly, that they exerted all their strength to have saved him, in hopes of being able by his means to gain a clue, to guide them through some of those labyrinths of iniquitous and false policy, which they suspected, but could not otherwise detect, to the entire overthrow of their rivals. This so absolutely reversed the whole scene, that they who should have supported, now found themselves obliged to crush him, in their own defence, which, as it was the most popular measure, they were still able to do. ‘ There

‘ There is but one thing more necessary for me to add,
‘ and that is, the motive for their giving him such secret
‘ orders; which, as far as reason can judge in such dark
‘ confused mysteries, must have been this: Provoked at
‘ the repeated insults and injustice of the French, the mi-
‘ nistry here had precipitately plunged themselves into
‘ war, without being prepared, or even determined to
‘ pursue it; and then, like a parcel of children who have
‘ exhausted all their strength and resolution in one spiteful
‘ assault, stood in a state of stupefaction, utterly at a loss
‘ how to proceed, or retreat; till roused, at length, by
‘ the preparations and menaces of the enemy, they un-
‘ luckily blundered in their fright upon the wretched ex-
‘ pedient of letting them take this fortress, that, for the
‘ recovery of it, they might have a pretence for giving
‘ up to them those places about which the dispute began:
‘ and so botch up a peace any way, to get rid of a war
‘ they found themselves unable to manage. The con-
‘ sequence of this notable stroke of policy was, the spirit
‘ of the people was enflamed to such a degree, by this
‘ disgrace upon their arms, that they pushed on the war
‘ with a resolution little short of madness; and the scheme,
‘ which the ministers had so wisely laid for their escape,
‘ only sealed their ruin.

‘ This, my friend, is a short but just sketch of this un-
‘ fortunate affair, to which I shall add one circumstance to
‘ prove what I said of his being sacrificed to the humour
‘ of the times. The officer who commanded in the for-
‘ tress which was besieged, and who in the defence of it
‘ had betrayed a want of every qualification necessary for
‘ such an office, but courage, and had even let that be
‘ over-ruled by the instances of his officers, who were
‘ tired of fatigues and dangers from which they saw no
‘ prospect of relief, to surrender it at last, without any ab-
‘ solute necessity, was loaded with honours of every kind,
‘ in reward of a merit merely negative at best; that is,
‘ for not having done the very worst in his power, and
‘ surrendered it at first, without making any defence.

‘ I have thus gratified your curiosity, in the best man-

‘ ner

' ner in my power. If I have made any mistakes, they
 ' are not those of intention; but have proceeded from
 ' the inability of reason to trace such mysterious actions
 ' to their real motives. One observation, though, I know
 ' I cannot be mistaken in, which is, that this affair has
 ' given a wound to our corps (as I observed before) which
 ' it can never recover. For, after such an example, what
 ' officer of any rank can expect to escape, should he neg-
 ' lect to do his duty in the fullest manner, however
 ' powerful his private motives to the contrary may be!
 ' For my own part, I cannot say it yet affects me much.
 ' I am poor, and therefore must push. If I ever have the
 ' good luck to be otherwise, I know the consequence; and
 ' will rather quit the service, than hazard being shot, as
 ' I know must be any man's fate, who shall hereafter be
 ' found to fail in the performance of his duty, from a
 ' prudential regard to the preservation of his life or for-
 ' tune; however great that fortune, or powerful his fa-
 ' mily. And so, here's to you, neck or nothing is
 ' now the word.'

The effect which this whole account had upon my
 master may be easily conceived. He pledged his friend,
 though without naming the toast; and assenting to his
 remarks by a heavy sigh, took his leave, without saying
 a word.

CHAP. XII.

*Chrysal changes his service. He gets a view of a
 court of civil judicature, on an extraordinary occasion.
 Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the
 law. A whimsical application of an old story produces the
 strange effect of putting a counsellor out of countenance.
 The necessity of absolute power in some governments with
 a common decision, by which nothing is decided.*

I next passed from the hands of my old master into the
 possession of the purser, who traveling through a city
 where a matter of great moment was under judicial de-
 termination, he waited for the event, to gratify a natu-
 ral curiosity.

The affair was this: A foremast-man in a guard-ship,
 lying

lying in one of the neighbouring harbours, had by repeated misbehaviour, in going clandestinely on shore, contrary to the express orders of his captain, provoked him at length to give him a dozen at the gang-way, in order to terrify others from following his example. Instead of being reclaimed by this punishment, the fellow persisted to misbehave in such a manner, that the captain, who was remarkably humane in his disposition, discharged him from the ship, to avoid the pain of punishing him any more. This was just what the wretch wanted. Accordingly, he went directly to a prostituted, pettyfogging attorney, who had before set him on the scheme, and employed him to sue the captain at law, for an assault, in punishing him in the harbour, where he had no power so to do.

In a country governed by laws, they must regularly take their course in every instance, however flagrant in its particular circumstances. After all the preliminary delays of practice, which, grievous as they may in some circumstances be to an individual, are yet the safety of the public, the affair was now brought to a legal decision. You are too well acquainted with the forms of law to require a minute account of all which were observed in this case. But there was one incident which I cannot pass over. As this was a matter that importantly concerned the interest of the navy, the rulers of it had ordered all the captains of the guard-ships, in the harbour where it had happened, to attend the trial, in order to inform the court, in the usages of their service. One of those, who had never seen a court of civil judicature before, but was a man of natural good sense, and some reading, having listened to the unintelligible pleadings, and gross exaggerations of the counsel on both sides of the question, especially those hired in the prosecution, till his patience was quite exhausted, at length arose, and having obtained permission from the judge to speak, addressed himself to the court in these words:

‘ I am sent here by those to whom the king has entrusted the conduct of his navy, to explain the nature
‘ and

‘ and rules of our service to this court, in case I see any
‘ danger of their forming a wrong judgment of it, from
‘ inexperience in a matter so much out of their way.
‘ The little gentleman yonder has spent so much breath,
‘ and shown such great reading on the subject, that I
‘ imagine it is proper for me to make him some answer,
‘ which I shall do in as few words as possible, being not
‘ half so long winded as he. But first, I must beg leave
‘ to tell him a story, to conform to rule.

‘ I have read in a book (for I perceive that common
‘ sense signifies nothing here, if not supported by a quo-
‘ tation, it matters not whether to the purpose, or not!)
‘ that a certain philosopher having declaimed one day for
‘ a considerable length of time before Alexander the
‘ Great, at the head of his army, on the duties of a ge-
‘ neral, the emperor turned about to Parmenio, one of
‘ his generals who stood near him, and asked him what
‘ he thought of his speech?—“Sire,” answered Parme-
‘ nio, “my opinion is, that *I never heard a fool talk so*
‘ *learnedly.*”—

‘ I make no applications. All that I say on this oc-
‘ casion is, that I am sure that gentleman has never been
‘ at sea; and consequently knows nothing of the service,
‘ on which he has been haranguing with such vehemence,
‘ and elocution. He has expatiated most pathetically on
‘ the injustice of inflicting corporal punishment, without
‘ a legal trial, and condemnation; and flourished on the
‘ danger of such an invasion of liberty. These, to be
‘ sure, are fine words; but I much doubt whether they
‘ are properly applied on this occasion. The most perfect
‘ form of government is allowed to be *absolute despotism*,
‘ as best calculated to work its effects without delay. In
‘ all the communities in this world, I doubt if there is
‘ one, where immediate obedience to the command of the
‘ governor is so indispensibly necessary to the safety of
‘ the whole, or where individuals are so insensible to every
‘ other motive to obedience but fear, as in a man of war.
‘ I have myself the honour to command a ship, in which
‘ I have five hundred men under me, the greatest part of
‘ whom

' whom (I am sorry to say it) are the out-casts of human
 ' nature, as from some unhappy circumstances is, and
 ' perhaps must always be, the universal case in our service.
 ' Now, as instances daily occur, in which a moment's
 ' delay or hesitation to execute my orders, though at-
 ' tended with the greatest difficulty, or most imminent
 ' danger, must evidently hazard the loss of the ship, and
 ' every life in her; I desire that gentleman to inform me
 ' how I am to act, should one of the men, whom I order,
 ' suppose to cut away a yard that is broke in the flings,
 ' refuse to go aloft, and tell me I have no right to punish
 ' him, till he is regularly tried and found guilty! Shall
 ' I admit of such an answer, to be an example to the
 ' rest? Or shall I punish him with such severity on the
 ' spot, by my own mere authority, as to terrify any other
 ' from imitating him? The answer to this plain question
 ' will determine the affair under consideration. If it is
 ' said that in the present case the ship's being in the har-
 ' bour makes a difference, let us suppose her on fire there,
 ' and the difference will vanish. In a word, if the absolute
 ' authority indispensibly necessary for carrying on our
 ' service in some instances is attempted to be abridged in
 ' any, it will of course be at length disputed in all, and
 ' the service ruined. All that can be done is to be cau-
 ' tious not to trust it in improper hands.'

This method of reasoning changed the face of the af-
 fair. The counsellor hung down his head, and slunk out
 of the court. The fears which had been entertained for
 public liberty vanished; and the jury simply found the
 fact, but left the point of law to be determined by the
 judges; so that after all this expence and trouble, mat-
 ters remained in the same state of uncertainty as before,
 to the great joy of the lawyers.

CHAP. XIII.

*Chrysal changes his service, and gets into the possession
 of a physician and author. His master joins in a remark-
 able set of company. Their characters. Chrysal changes
 his service. Account of the enterprise on which his late
 master's*

master's companions were going ; with the convincing arguments they used to procure obedience to their commands.

MY master, on his arrival in London, paid me away at a coffee-house, from whence I got into the possession of a physician and author, who, having shewn me many of the mysteries of the latter profession, proceeded to introduce me into new scenes. Happy in the contemplation of his own abilities, and the pleasing prospects they opened to him, he proceeded to figure as usual, in his variegated sphere. Accordingly, he descended from his ærial citadel, and going out to visit his patients, repaired directly to a tavern, to join a set of *critics* and *choice spirits, souls of sentiments and fire*, who were going that evening upon an expedition, that was to immortalize their names. This was no less than to assume the modest power of making laws that should affect the property of a number of their fellow subjects ; the execution of which they were resolved to enforce by the mild and equitable means which the respectable legislature of the mob always use to enforce obedience to their decrees.

Those who were honoured by being taken thus under their immediate command, were the *actors* of *plays* and *interludes*, of which, as the works of *genius*, and calculated for the entertainment of *the idle*, they claimed the sole and absolute rule. You conclude from this, that they must have been persons of learning, and large fortune, whose affluence gave them leisure to attend to subjects which their education qualified them to judge of ; but the contrary was the fact. They were either *blanks in the creation*, whom a superficial smattering of letters had filled with such an opinion of themselves, as to make them look with contempt upon every exertion of industry, as beneath their dignity, though at the same time they were barely able to subsist without it, by all the little shifts of œconomy ; or, tradesmen, almost absolutely illiterate, who, from a preposterous ambition of hiding an ignorance that was not any reproach to their station, set up for the arbiters of taste, on the strength of a set of phrases picked up at random, and of which they knew

not even the meaning; and neglected the business by which they were to earn their bread, in order to make a shew of knowledge, that could be of no use to them.

When this illustrious set had sufficiently conned their several parts, in the great enterprise which they were going to undertake, and raised their resolutions to a proper pitch by wine, they prepared to adjourn to the scene of action, the theatre; and calling for a bill, I was changed by my master to pay his club, and directly borrowed from the landlord by one of the leaders of the party, who changed me again at the door of the theatre, to pay for his admission. These changes of my service, however, did not prevent my seeing the process of this extraordinary affair. On the contrary; as I now belonged to the whole theatrical community in general, I had an opportunity of getting a full insight into the nature and mysteries of every part of that profession. I see you desire to know my sentiments on a subject, that has been canvassed by the ingenious of all ages. Such a curiosity is natural, and shall be gratified at a proper time; but at present I must not interrupt the account of this transaction. From the manner in which those self-made legislators had talked, when together, of every circumstance in the management of a theatre, and profession of an actor, you would have concluded that they were going to overturn the whole present system of the stage, and institute another on principles directly opposite, according to their own ideas of perfection. But that was not the case. Among all the errors and abuses, against which they declaimed with such vehemence, they thought proper to attack only one, which they thought most interesting to themselves in particular. This was the right which reason and law gave the performers to fix the price of their own labours.

In the infancy of the stage in London, before it had been brought, by much labour and expence, to such a degree of perfection, as to attract the attention of the public, it had been the custom after a certain part of the representation was over, to admit persons for less than was paid

paid at the beginning. The obvious reason of this was to allure company of any kind thither, and take the most they could get, rather than keep the house empty. But when the passion for seeing plays arose to its present height, this expedient appeared no longer necessary, and therefore was disused; a change which, those who conducted the entertainments of the theatre justified, by alledging the enhanced salaries of the actors, and the improvements made in the machinery and decorations of the stage since the time when that custom was introduced, which they said required reimbursement, by a method, that could not justly be taken offence at, *as none were obliged to go, who did not approve of the terms.*

Such a measure was most alarming to these men of taste, some of whom denied themselves the pleasure of going to the beginning of the performance *because they were not able to pay the full price*; as the others *could not get from behind their counters before it was half ended*; and for these good reasons both thought it the highest grievance to have a custom abolished, that had been so convenient to them. Accordingly, as soon as the performance began, they all arose, and without any respect to the rest of the audience, interrupted the players in the most outrageous manner, nor would desist, till the managers should promise to redress the grievance which affected them so severely, and take half-prices, as before. This was too flagrant a violation of justice to be submitted to so suddenly. The managers, therefore, refused; upon which *these redressers of grievances* gave a loose to their resentment, at such an instance of disobedience to their authority, and tore the house to pieces, doing more damage to the proprietors than their own entire worldly substance could repair.

CHAP. XIV.

The ruinous appearance of the scene of action supplies matter for mirth to those whose trade is to laugh at every thing. The point carried against law and reason. Inquiry into the cause of this. The rise of the prejudice against the profession of an actor. WHEN

WHEN these men of genius and public spirit had thus gallantly accomplished their enterprise, they marched off in triumph, denouncing a repetition of their resentment, should their orders not be obeyed. The appearance of the house, after this ravage, and the looks of the actors, when they ventured to creep out of their hiding holes, seemed to realise the mimic scenes usually exhibited there. All was havoc, desolation, amazement, and affright. Crowns, sceptres, candlesticks, and broken benches were jumbled together. Sovereigns and sweepers, lords, link-boys, duchesses, and cinder-wenches joined in one common lamentation of their fate. This, however, lasted not long. Their hearts were not formed of stuff, for grief to make a deep impression on; nor were they so unaccustomed to the rubs of life as to be dejected at any mischance. Their concern, therefore, wore off with their fright; and one of them, resuming his character of turning every thing into ridicule, marched with solemn pace and rueful countenance up to the motly ruins now collected into a heap, and with some droll variations, apt to the occasion, spouted over them a tragic speech in all the emphasis and trick of woe. The humour instantly ran through them all. Mirth grinned on every face; and they vied in cracking villanous jests on each others undoing. But the managers had suffered too severely in their property to be in so merry a mood. They consulted among themselves, and *with the sages of the law*, what was proper for them to do, to obtain redress for such injustice, and prevent the menaced repetition of it. But all was to no purpose. Law gave way to licentiousness; and they were obliged to submit to the most intolerable of all tyrannies, *that of the mob*.

You are surprised that such things should be, in a country governed by equal and established laws. In speculation it must seem strange; but the least acquaintance with life would reconcile you to inconsistencies still grosser. There is something, however, in the circumstances of this case, which deserves attention, and makes it not improper to trace to their origin the prejudices from which such injustice could proceed. When

When the system of divine worship, which is now professed in these parts of the world, was first proposed to mankind, the human mind was a slave to superstitions, which were a disgrace to that portion of reason given for its direction. By a perversion, of which man alone is capable, the celebration of those superstitions, though professedly designed in honour of the Deity, was attended with *games*, and *scenical interludes*, in which the grossest immoralities received the sanction of religion, and were practised openly as pleasing to him. This was done to attach the passions of the multitude; and satisfy their curiosity with sensible representations, in order to prevent their making rational inquiries into the grounds of those superstitions, the principles of which were subservient to the policy of the ruling powers. A religion instituted on purpose to reclaim man from immoralities and superstitions, and restore him to the dignity of his nature, necessarily struck at every thing that conduced to their support: Accordingly the persons appointed to propagate it exerted all their endeavours against those games and interludes, both as a part of the superstitious worship which they wanted to abolish, and as in themselves subversive of moral virtue, by the vices which they exhibited to imitation, heightened, and made still more alluring by every incentive art, and pomp of expence. For this purpose reason, as well as religion, supplied ready and powerful arguments; but, not content to wait for the slow effect of these, they strove to prejudice those whom they could not persuade; and, to obviate the imitation of their example, raised an abhorrence to the persons of all concerned in such representations, casting them off from the rites of religion, and declaring them unworthy both of the protection of the laws, and the common privileges of society: A method, that in one respect defeated its own design; as it could never reclaim the offenders, however it might deter others, from following their example. Nor did they stop here. By an error too common in the heat of argumentation, they concluded *from the abuse, against*
the

the use of the stage, and branded with the mark of reprobation all future actors, for the faults of the present.

CHAP. XV.

Continued. The common consequence of excess of zeal. The professed intent of the theatrical representations defeated by this absurd prejudice against actors. The vices against which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means of remedying this, and other abuses.

HOWEVER the occasion might there seem to justify this excess of zeal, when the cause ceased, the effect should in reason have ceased also; and these general censures have been repealed. The superstitions which were the foundation of the first charge against the stage have been long abolished; nor are the absurdities and immoralities which gave offence to reason and virtue any longer practised there. On the contrary, the professed intent of theatrical representations at present is, to insinuate instruction under the pleasing appearance of entertainment, to encourage virtue by example, and inculcate the practice of it, by showing the evils inseparably attendant on vice; to regulate the passions, by displaying the danger of indulging them too far, and to put folly out of countenance, by holding it up to ridicule. Now, as experience has proved the stage capable of answering these great ends, what can be more injudicious than to attempt to bring it into disrepute. What more unjust than to consign to infamy those who exert the finest powers of the human mind and body to accomplish this end in the most pleasing manner? Yet, such is the absurdity of man, that while persons of the most exalted rank and sacred characters not only frequent the theatre, but also compose works to be represented on it, and evidently value themselves more on possessing the abilities requisite to compose them, than on all their other distinctions in life, those from whose action such compositions receive their force and beauty are held in disrepute, and subject to the severest disadvantages only for acting them. If it is no disgrace to write a play, why should it be any to act it? It

is true, the consequences of this prejudice are not so severe here as in other countries, but still they are such as reason is ashamed of. If actors are not *literally* excluded from the protection of the laws, they want support to avail themselves of that protection, as in the case which gave rise to these reflections! If they are not *actually* (*for literally they are!*) excluded from the rites of religion, they want encouragement to participate in them! I see you are ready to object to the utility of the stage, the faults in many of the performances exhibited upon it; and to justify the disrepute affixed to the character of an actor, from the general immorality of their conduct in private life, as if it arose solely from their profession. But a moment's reflection would suggest answers to both these objections.

If there is any improper exhibition upon the stage, surely the blame should fall on those who have a legal power to prevent such abuse of the institution of it! If the actors are immoral in their lives, should it not be considered that they are prejudiced from their profession; and deprived of one of the strongest inducements of virtue, that is, reputation, before they are proved to be guilty of vice. The consequence of this is, that too few enter into the profession, till after they have lost their reputation, or are driven by mere necessity; by which means they reflect that disgrace upon it, which they are thought to suffer from it; and as they are sensible that they are precluded by this prejudice from all possibility of recovering or preserving it by the most careful deportment, they become desperate, and proceed till they even lose the sense of unavailing shame. Whereas, if a different conduct was observed to them; if the brand of reputation was taken off, and the profession established in that credit which the abilities indispensibly necessary to eminence in it deserve, genius would be no longer damped by apprehension of reproach: more persons of good character would not scruple going on the stage, as they could preserve it there; nor vice seem to receive encouragement from public favour, because from this circumstance unhappily too often entangled

entangled with merit ; but the life of the actor would reflect the sentiments of the poet, and enforce them to imitation by example. Nor would it be difficult to work this important effect. All necessary, would be, to refuse admission on the stage to all notorious for vice of any kind ; to banish from it such as should become so after, however eminent in their merits ; and to support the profession by the civil power against the tyranny of the mob, so that the lives and properties of all concerned in it should be secure from suffering such licentious outrage and injustice, as no other subjects are exposed to ; and as are equally a reproach and insult to good government and common sense. Nor need it be apprehended that this would make them insolent, or slacken their endeavours to please. Their very being depends on public favour, the bare withholding of which is punishment sufficiently severe ; as ambition to acquire it will make them exert their utmost abilities, and always observe proper humility to the arbiters of their fate. They know that if they are neglected, they cannot live : On the contrary, it would enable them to rise to greater merit in their art, as they would no longer be under the wretched necessity of prostituting their own judgement, to please the gross taste of their tyrants. Many other arguments might be alledged against this grievous, and shameful abuse, but what I have said is sufficient to convince candid reason ; and with prejudice it is in vain to argue.

CHAP. XVI.

The system of policy by which Chrysal's master governed his state. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reason why so few new plays are acted. Inquiry into the present state of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from success. Managers and poets equally in fault, in their dealings with each other.

THE day after this great affair was thus equitably settled, on the treasurer's making up his week's account, I came into the possession of the manager, who having some occasion for money, put me into his pocket.

The measures of my new master's government in this little

little empire were the strongest burlesque on the policy of the world, the greatest sovereign in which had not more intrigues of state to manage, than were continually carrying on about him, from the ambition, envy, and jealousy of the several candidates for his royal favour. But all this bustle did not embarrass him in the least. He had the address to play off one party against another; and by never engaging himself particularly to any, was able to manage all. A method, by the bye, that might suggest an hint not unuseful to politicians in an higher sphere. But the part of his conduct that was most curious, and gave me the greatest pleasure, was his manner of parrying the attacks of the authors who were continually bringing him their works for representation on the stage, of which I had an opportunity of seeing many striking instances.

As it is evidently the interest of the manager of a theatre, to exhibit those performances, whose merit is most likely to gain the approbation of the public; and as no man who is capable of writing a piece proper for exhibition can be supposed to want judgment to know whether it has that merit, you may naturally think that there could not be much difficulty in the intercourse between them; but human actions are not always to be judged of from the strongest appearances of reason. The representation of a new piece necessarily puts the manager to some expence and much trouble. If you add to this, the natural anxiety about success, for merit is often rejected by caprice, or personal prejudice, you will not wonder that he should be cautious what he brings upon the stage; and prefer acting old ones, unattended with these inconveniences, while the public will bear the repetition, and does not peremptorily demand new.

This is the real reason why so few new pieces are performed; and not any decline of poetical genius to produce them; it being certain that there are as many good plays written now, as at any former point of time. But the matter is this. All the good ones of those times lie together before you, and raise your opinion to the happy days which produced them: But if you consider the long
intervals

intervals between, and the innumerable bad ones which appeared along with them, but are now lost in the wreck of time, you will find that you have not so great reason to complain of the present decline of genius, as you may have imagined. I do not, by this, mean that every one who pretends to write is possessed of that genius; or that all the pieces offered to the stage are proper for representation. On the contrary, many who want every qualification indispensable to success in such attempts, make them every day in defiance of reason; and strive to obtrude upon the public works which are a reproach to common sense. The motives of this are obvious. Whenever a man is at a loss how to spend his time, or wants to raise a little money, down he sits and writes a play. The consequence of this is, that the very reasons which made him turn poet necessarily preclude him from success. Idleness prevents that care, that *limæ labor*, which alone can make a performance proper for public representation; and distress depresses the imagination, and hinders its rising to that happy boldness, which is the essence of poetry.

It appears from hence, that if the managers of theatres from interested motives are often to blame for rejecting good pieces; poets (or those who would be thought such) are much oftener culpable for offering them bad ones. The difference of opinion unavoidable on this account occasions the difficulty in their intercourse. But in this the contest is not equal. The word of the manager is decisive; while the poet has nothing left, but to vent his resentment in unavailing (and often unjust) complaints, and abuse, in which those who have least right are always loudest; for enamoured with the beauty of their own offspring, like the ape in the fable, they throw dirt at all who presume to find fault with it. But severe as it must be to suffer this; it is not the greatest difficulty the manager has to encounter with them. Not satisfied with the civil refusal of affected delays and excuses, they must have a direct answer, which they controvert with all their power, and oblige him to support by such arguments

guments as must give him pain, if he has either politeness or good-nature; though, after all, instead of convincing them, he only gets their's and their friends ill-will, and arms all their tongues against him.

It is not to be doubted but the evasions which managers use to shift off good pieces are as grossly offensive to moral propriety, truth, and candour, as the arguments of authors in defence of bad ones can possibly be to reason; but as I did not happen to be witness to any instances of them, I shall confine my account to the letter.

CHAP. XVII.

Chrysal's master sits in judgment on some pieces offered to him. A poet of fashion enters. The arguments by which he supports his work against the objections of Chrysal's master, who makes some curious dramatical strictures. The poet, driven from his last retreat, the interest of his great friends, by the common cant of the house's being full for the season, departs in a rage, denouncing their resentment, which Chrysal's master shows his reason not to fear the effects of.

THE important morning after I came into the possession of the manager was big with the fate of many a poetical performance, the authors of which were appointed to come there for his decisive answer. Accordingly, as soon as he had breakfasted, he repaired to his tribunal, where he had been waited for, some time, by one of those aspiring geniuses, who sacrifice the solid happiness of independence to the vain ambition of being well with the great; submitting to their capricious humours for the honour of a nod in public places, or an invitation to their tables; to enhance their welcome at which, and consume time they know not how to make better use of, they fall upon this wise expedient of turning poet.

When they had gone through all the formalities of polite address, and taken their seats with proper ceremony, the poet opened the business. 'Well, sir,' said he, with a smile of self-complaisance, 'you have perused that trifle: what is your opinion? Heh! don't you think it will do?'

'Sir,' answered my master, with the smooth simper of a courtier,

a courtier, 'you do it injustice by calling it a trifle: the piece has a great deal of merit; and reads very prettily in many places; but I fear it is not quite so proper for the stage!'—'How, sir! not proper for the stage! pray, sir, where does the impropriety lie? Several persons of the first rank have read it, and found no such thing. *His grace* said, it abounded with the *vis comica*. *Lord Tastly* was charmed with the *attic salt*; and *Sir Courtly* admired the elegance of the diction.—'Pray, sir, where then can the impropriety lie? They are allowed to be good judges.'—'Pardon me, sir, I did not presume to call their judgment in question, in the least. But—a—'

'And why, then, should you hesitate to receive it? They will support it with all their interest.'—'That, sir, I do not doubt. But—still, Sir—the town.'—

'The town, sir, ! and pray what of the town? Is the judgment of the town to be put in competition with theirs.'—'No, sir! by no means! but still the town is a very formidable and arbitrary judge; and will not admit its authority to be disputed in such matters as this.'—'And, pray, good sir, what objections can the judicious town, or you, its learned advocate, make!'—

'Sir, you impose a very disagreeable task upon me: I had much rather be excused.'—'I do not in the least doubt that, sir; but my friends insist upon a direct answer. Either receive the play, or say you will not.'—

'Sir, I should be very sorry to give offence to any gentleman; but since you insist upon my opinion. Do not you think, sir, the plot is too—too—too domestic? Are not the intrigues and tricks of servants too low a subject for polite entertainment?'—'How, sir! have you any objection to servants? Do not they make a principal part in all our modern comedies? Are the *Jeremy's*, and *Scrubs*, and *Phillis's*, and a thousand others, to be rejected because they are servants?'—

'No, sir! but consider they are not the principal characters; nor does the plot turn upon them. They come in, as it were, by accident; and indeed, except
' in

‘ in the instances you have mentioned, and, perhaps, a very few more, they had much better be left out. It shews a grossness of taste to stoop to them for entertainment.’—‘ And do I not introduce the masters and mistresses too, as well as the servants? Are there not country squires, and town fops, and fine ladies?’—

‘ Yes, sir, you do introduce them, but in a subordinate light; and merely to be the dupes of their servants, without any business or importance of their own.’—

‘ And, pray, sir, in what other light do most masters appear? Ha! ha! ha!—Well, then, it seems all your objections are to the fable. You have nothing to say against the sentiments and diction.’—‘ The sentiments, sir, may be very proper, and the diction suited to them: but you must be sensible that the former objection affects them all equally. The characters are too low; and the sentiments and diction consequently too coarse.’—

‘ Sir—Sir—Sir—I shall not enter into any further arguments with you. *His grace* bids me tell you, he insists upon your receiving it, or giving him such reasons as he shall think satisfactory, which must be very different from those insignificant cavils.’—‘ His grace need not exert his authority to influence my obedience. The least hint of his pleasure were sufficient; but unluckily I am engaged for the whole season; quite *full*.’—

‘ *Full!* why did you not tell me so at first?’—‘ Because you insisted on having my opinion.’—‘ Very well, sir, I shall let his grace, and all my friends, know how you have behaved. Let me have the play! impertinent, insolent, ignorant puppy;’ muttered he, as he went out.

‘ So,’ said my master, as soon as he was gone, ‘ I have now made him my enemy for ever. As for his *noble friends*, they are above troubling themselves about any thing of the kind, and give him leave to mention their names only to get rid of his importunity.’

CHAP. XVIII.

Continuation. Chrysal’s master rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More

dramatical strictures. The poet modestly insists that his play is refused only because it wants the interest of the great ; and goes off in a buff. Another poet repulsed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments against these laws. The poet refuses to conform to the present taste ; and makes an appeal. One more poet refused, only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on something that affects more than care to own it.

THE last poet was scarce down stairs, when a footman announced the entrance of another. My master did not think it necessary to observe so much ceremony with him, as he had done with the former, but told him directly, that he could not receive his piece. Such a sentence struck the poet *all of an heap*. He was unable to speak for some moments ; but recovering himself at length, ‘ Not receive it, sir,’ said he, ‘ you surprise me. ‘ Pray, sir, why so ?’—‘ I am very loath to find fault, sir,’ answered my master, ‘ but you seem to be utterly unacquainted with all *the laws of the drama*.’—‘ The laws of the drama ! they are but art ; I write from nature. ‘ these laws have been long laid aside. Shakespeare wrote ‘ without laws.’—‘ So much the worse. But he is a ‘ dangerous example to imitate. The local temporary ‘ laws of the ancient drama are laid aside, it is true, but ‘ not the immutable, general laws of propriety and reason. ‘ Your fable is unconnected, improbable, and un- ‘ affecting.’—‘ How, sir, unaffected ! Can the fall of a ‘ mighty empire be said to be unaffected ?’—‘ No, Sir ! ‘ but the description of it most certainly may, if not drawn ‘ with judgment and force. And then your characters ‘ are ill-supported ; and your sentiments and language ‘ lost in the clouds.’—‘ What, sir ! can the sentiments of ‘ kings and princes be too sublime ?’—‘ There is a wide ‘ difference between being sublime, and swollen out of ‘ nature.’—

‘ But what objection can you make to the language ? ‘ Is it not raised with *epithets*, and *metaphors*, and all the ‘ figures of poetry ?’—‘ Good sir ! poetical figures in ‘ poor language look like embroidery on a blanket. They
only

‘ only make its poverty ridiculous. Beside, your *stalking in their stilts*, betrays you into many a stumble in the dirt. Your figures frequently fly in the face of common sense, and break through every rule of grammar.’

‘ Well, sir! I shall consider of these particulars. The great objection I have heard made to modern plays is, their want of business: but this can never be charged to mine. There is a ghost, and a battle; and a king dethroned. Business enough, and enough, I am sure.’ — ‘ Ghosts and battles, sir, it is true, are sometimes introduced with success; but then it must be a master in the art, else they have a contrary effect.’ — ‘ I apprehend that the aim of tragedy is to work upon the passions. In this, I believe, you cannot say I have failed: the distress is truly great.’ — ‘ Distress, when out of character, loses the appearance of reality, and becomes ridiculous. A king in an alms-house, and a queen begging from door to door, are images which sink into a burlesque.’ — ‘ It is very well, sir! you may say what you please, but I am satisfied it is not want of merit in my play that makes you refuse it. You daily act much worse. If it had been recommended to you by some lord, you would have found none of these faults; but merit may starve without interest to support it, now-a-days. This is fine encouragement to genius, truly; and the public is like to be well entertained while such men have it in their power to refuse every thing that does not happen to please themselves.’

Saying this, he snatched up his play, leaving my master to please himself with the prospect of being criticised upon in a news-paper, and pulled to pieces in a scurrilous pamphlet. He had not time to indulge these reflections long, when another of his clients attended his levee. As soon as he was seated, ‘ I have read over your work with great care,’ said my master, and am sorry to say, ‘ I think it improper for the stage.’ — ‘ Pray, sir, why so?’ answered the poet with an air of importance. ‘ It is written strictly according to the rules of the drama: and enriched with the sublimest sentiments of the ancients.’

‘ents.’—‘Sir, I am sensible of its merits as well as of
‘the great learning of the author: but the taste of the
‘times requires entertainment of a different kind.’—
‘Surely, compliance with a vitiated taste will not justify
‘the breach of rules, taken originally from nature, and
‘established for so many ages.’—‘I neither dispute the
‘original justice, nor the antiquity of them: but I ap-
‘prehend that the latter, in a great measure, destroys the
‘present force of the former. The customs of mankind,
‘the part of nature which comes within the province of
‘the drama, are so changed since the establishment of
‘those rules, that it would be most absurd to exact obe-
‘dience to them now. Beside, may it not be said, with-
‘out violation to the respect due to antiquity, that expe-
‘rience, in a great length of time, may have made many
‘improvements in those rules. The infancy of every art
‘is weak.’—‘But whatever changes may have happened
‘in the customs of the world, truth still remains the same,
‘and the genuine sentiments of nature can not displease.’
—‘Very true! but still they may not always be received
‘with equal pleasure in the same garb. Unimpassioned
‘sentiment, however just and sublime, works not the ef-
‘fects designed by the drama, whose aim is to convey
‘instruction and pleasure at the same time by an imme-
‘diate address to the passions.’—‘Is it possible, that
‘you can be an advocate for the irregular monsters, which
‘at present dishonour the stage?’—‘As for irregularity,
‘I look upon it to be but an imaginary defect. Though
‘even if it were otherwise, I am the servant of the pub-
‘lic, and obliged to find entertainment for their taste, be
‘it what it will. If you would but conform’—‘No,
‘sir! that I never will, against reason and the ancients.
‘I see you are prejudiced, and, therefore, I shall not
‘argue with you any longer. But I shall not acquiesce
‘in silence. I will publish the performance, without
‘being discouraged by your refusal, and appeal to the
‘judgment of the learned.’ He then marched off, with
a stately pace, and my master looking after him, ‘There
‘again,’ said he, shrugging his shoulders, ‘I shall now
‘have

‘ have the ghosts of Sophocles and Aristotle, and all the
‘ doughty ancients, raised to haunt me.’

As he said this, a person entered, whose whole appearance spoke distress. He approached my master, bowing lowly, and trembling with anxiety as he spoke: ‘ I
‘ have made bold to wait upon you, sir,’ said he, ‘ but if
‘ you are not at leisure, will call another time ’—‘ Pray
‘ sir sit down,’ replied my master, with a smile of encouragement, ‘ I have looked over your work, and am concerned that it is not in my power to receive it; as I
‘ should be sincerely glad to serve you. But in this it is
‘ not possible. I must be plain with you:—You seem to
‘ want every poetical talent.’—‘ I thought, sir,’ returned the poet, scarce able to collect spirits enough to speak to him, ‘ that the business of tragedy was to work upon the
‘ passions! I depended entirely on the distress.’—‘ Very
‘ true, sir! but there are other passions besides pity to be
‘ applied to; nor is poverty a proper distress to work
‘ upon them. Severe as it is to be felt, it affects but
‘ little in representation. The upper ranks of life know
‘ not what it is; and those who do are desirous to keep
‘ the thought at a distance, and conceal a knowledge they
‘ are ashamed of. The mind must be properly prepared
‘ to feel for another. The description of a famine would
‘ affect but little after a feast.’

This came too home to the unhappy poet. He burst into tears, and was departing without being able to make a reply. My master felt his distress; though he could not receive his play, as he knew that an audience would pay no regard to his circumstances, nor give up an evening’s entertainment to relieve an author’s indigence; and waiting on him to the door, slipped a couple of guineas into his hand; when it fell to my lot to change my service. I had never experienced my own influence on the human heart so strongly as on this occasion. The poet kissed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture too big for utterance, and forgetting for a moment all his distresses, went to a coffee-house and changed me to pay for his breakfast.

Chrysal changes his service. His master goes to be admitted into an extraordinary society. Some reflections not suited to the taste of the times. Rise of this society. A description of a monastery, with an account of its members, and some of its rules.

ON the same day that I entered into the service of the master of the coffee house, he paid me away in cashing a bill for a *man of fashion*, who, the next morning, set out upon a party of pleasure of a most extraordinary nature. This was, to be admitted into a society, formed of a number of persons of the first distinction, in burlesque imitation of religious societies, which are instituted in other countries.

I have already told you that I shall not give any opinion in religious matters. But, whether the original institution of such societies was right or not, as the motive of them was the worship of the Deity, any attempt to turn them into ridicule most certainly must be wrong; the mind of man seldom being acute or attentive enough to distinguish between matters which to appearance are so intimately connected as the mode of worship, and the object of it; but generally involving either in the disregard affecting the other. In the present instance, indeed, the disregard was designedly levelled at both alike.

To give you a proper notion of the scene in which my master was going to act a capital part, it is necessary to trace the whole from the original. A person of a flighty imagination, and who possessed a fortune that enabled him to pursue those flights, cloyed with common pleasures, and ambitious of distinguishing himself among his companions, had resolved to try if he could not strike out something new, that should at the same time please his own taste, and do honour to his genius. The mere gratifications of sense, in their utmost extent, not answering his design, he had recourse to the assistance of imagination to enhance them. The great *butt*, against which men of pleasure play off all their wit, is religion. Their reasons for a practice so gross are obvious. As the voice
of

of conscience will sometimes intrude upon them so as to pall their highest pleasures in the very moment of enjoyment, their first endeavour is to silence it, which they find by experience, cannot be done so effectually by any other method as by this of taking off the respect paid to religion, from which conscience borrows the terrors that make its admonitions so unwelcome. Besides, they think it shews their superiority over the rest of mankind, to laugh at what they are afraid of; as it is also convenient for their character of wit, to exert it on topics where it is safe from being rivalled by men of real understanding.

These weighty considerations determined him to season his scheme as high as he could with impiety, in order to make it the better relished. Accordingly, after due deliberation on a matter of such moment, he at length hit upon a plan that pleased him.

In the middle of a large lake upon his estate, there was an island, the natural beauties of whose situation had been heightened by every improvement of art. On this island he erected a building, exactly on the model of the monasteries which he had seen in other countries; and, to make the resemblance complete, there was not a vice that he had ever heard imputed to the inhabitants of them, for practising which he did not make provision in his. The cellars were stored with the choicest wines; the larders with the delicacies of every climate; and the cells were fitted up for all the purposes of lasciviousness, for which proper objects were also provided. Thus far the ridicule, however criminal in itself, may seem to have been designed only against those societies of human institution: but it was beneath his genius and spirit to stop here. Nothing less would satisfy him than to attack the very essentials of the religion established by the laws of his country, and acknowledged by every serious person in it to be divine. For this pious purpose, when every thing was prepared for their reception, his next care was to find a fraternity proper for the place. But in this his rank and course of life made him not long at a loss. He selected from among his intimates a number equal to that of those who had been at the first chosen to inculcate the religion

religion which he designed to ridicule, whose names they assumed, as he with equal modesty and piety did that of the divine author of it : and, to supply any decrease in this number by death or desertion from the terrors of reflection, he instituted an inferior order of as many more chosen also with the greatest caution and regard to the latitude of their principles, their fortunes, and mirthful accomplishments. The probationary office of these latter was to attend upon their superiors in the celebration of their mysteries, which were all performed in the chapel of the monastery, where no other servants were ever permitted to enter, on the most common occasion, as the very decorations of it would, in a great measure, have betrayed their secrets : the ceiling being covered with emblems and devices too gross to require explanation to the meanest capacity ; and the walls painted with the portraits of those whose names and characters they assumed, represented in attitudes and actions horrible to imagination. Nor was their care to keep their mysteries impenetrably secret confined to this exclusion of common servants. The diffidence of conscious guilt made them even distrust each other, till bound to secrecy by oaths and imprecations, receiving their force from the religion thus abused by them : an absurdity common among men associated for the most flagitious purposes. But, strong as the power of superstition is over weak and wicked minds (for nothing but the grossed superstition could make them think oaths in such circumstances binding!) their secrecy was secured by a still stronger motive, which was fear. They were sensible that even suspicion of such vices would for ever exclude them from the society of all those, whom, in despite of themselves, they could not help holding in respect ; and that so outrageous an insult upon the laws was liable to punishment from the secular power, though they might by their interest evade the direct effects of which, yet the imputation would make them so obnoxious to the people in general, that they could no longer hope to enjoy any of the lucrative employments of the state, if their resentment did not arise still higher, and make them take
that

that punishment into their own hands! and these fears prevented their secrets being divulged even by such as had resolution enough to desert the society; as they imagined the stain could never be so effectually expunged, as to secure them from those consequences.

The rites of this society; and the ceremonies observed upon the admission into it, will be best explained by the account of what I saw my master perform on this occasion; when he was candidate for the higher order, having already served his noviciate in the lower.

CHAP. XX.

Chrysal's master arrives at the monastery. The manner of his being admitted into the society. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the society's injustice in preferring Chrysal's master to him. The mirth of the company disturbed by the entrance of the devil, just as he was invoked by Chrysal's master. The effect of such a visitor upon the company. The devil fixes upon Chrysal's master in particular, and makes him squeak.

IT was about four o'clock in the afternoon when my master arrived at the verge of the lake, where he no sooner made the concerted signal, than a boat was sent to ferry him over. On his landing on the island, he went to the monastery, where he found the society just sitting down to dinner, at which he took his place among them. When they had made a short meal, and drank their spirits up to a proper pitch, they retired to their respective cells, to prepare for the solemnity they were going to celebrate. My master, then clad in a milk white robe of the finest linen, that flowed loosely round him, repaired, at the tolling of the bell, to the chapel, the scene of all their mysterious rites, and knocking gently thrice at the door, it was opened to him, to the sound of soft and solemn music. On his entrance he made a most profound obeisance. and advancing slowly towards a table that stood against the wall in the upper end of the chapel, as soon as he came to the rails, by which it was surrounded, he fell upon his knees, and making a profession of his principles nearly in the words, but with the most gross perversion of

of the sense of the articles of faith of the religion established in the country, demanded admission within the rails, the peculiar station of the upper order, where the superior and eleven of the fraternity (the twelfth place was vacant, and now to be filled up) stood arrayed in the habits of those whose names and characters they profaned by their assumption.

When he had finished, another candidate advanced in the like manner, and making his profession, also preferred the same claim; as there were more who had a right to do, but, discouraged by the superior merit of these two, they had declined their pretensions for this time.

The brotherhood, having heard the competitors with attention, retired to the table, and kneeling around it, the superior repeated a prayer, in the same strain and manner with the profession of the candidates, to the Being whom they served, to direct their choice to him of the two most worthy of his service. The superior then proceeded to take the suffrages of the rest, with the same mimic solemnity; when my master being found to have the majority, his election was exultingly attributed to immediate inspiration, and he was accordingly admitted within the rails, where he received the name and character which he was to bear in the society, in a manner not proper to be described, every the most sacred rite and ceremony of religion being profaned, all the prayers and hymns of praise appointed for the worship of the Deity burlesqued by a perversion to the horrid occasion. In this manner the evening was wasted till supper-time, when they sat down to a banquet in the chapel, in honour of the occasion, at which nothing that the most refined luxury, the most lascivious imagination could suggest to kindle loose desire, and provoke and gratify appetite, was wanting, both the superiors and inferiors (who were permitted to take their places at the lower end of the table, as soon as they had served in the banquet) vying with each other in loose songs, and dissertations of such gross lewdness and daring impiety, as despair may be supposed to dictate to the damned, in both which my master shone
I
so

so unrivaled, as to bear down the superior sprightliness, wit, and humour of all the rest; and compensate for the want of every companionable merit. But while they were in the height of their festivity, an affair happened that interrupted it for a time, and showed their resolution, particularly that of my master, in a proper light.

The person who had that day been his competitor for the honour of admission into the higher order of society possessed the qualifications which he wanted in the most eminent degree. He had such a flow of spirits, that it was impossible ever to be a moment dull in his company. His wit gave charms to every subject he spoke upon; and his humour displayed the foibles of mankind in such colours, as to put folly even out of countenance. But the same vanity which had first made him ambitious of entering into this society, only because it was composed of persons of a rank superior to his own in life, and still kept him in it, though upon acquaintance he despised them, nullified all these advantages. His spirits were often stretched to extravagance, to overpower competition. His humour was debased into buffoonery; and his wit was so prostituted to the lust of applause, that he would sacrifice his best friend for a scurvy jest; and wound the heart of him, whom he would at that very moment hazard his life and fortune to serve, only to raise a laugh; in which he was also assisted by a peculiar archness of disposition, and an unlucky expertness at carrying his jests into practice, as he proved upon this occasion. Though he disdained to decline the late competition, as the others did, he had been well aware that my master's higher rank in life would carry the point in dispute against him; for which injustice he resolved to revenge himself in the most signal manner. For this purpose, he had contrived the night before to bring into his cell a great baboon, which he had provided for the occasion. When the brotherhood retired to their cells after dinner, as I have told you, to prepare for the ceremony, he availed himself of the office of keeper of the chapel, which he then filled, to convey this creature, dressed up in the fantastic garb in which

childish imagination clothes devils, into the chapel, where he shut him up in a large chest that stood there to hold the ornaments and utensils of the table, when the society was away. To the spring of the lock of this chest he fastened a cord, which he drew under the carpet that was on the floor to his own seat, and there brought the end of it through a hole made for that purpose, in such a manner, that he could readily find it; and, by giving it a pull, open the chest, and let the baboon loose whenever he pleased, without being perceived by any of the rest of the company. Accordingly, when they were all in the height of their mirth, on my master's kneeling down, and with hands and eyes raised towards heaven repeating an invocation, in the perverted phrase of holy writ, to the Being whom they served, to come among them, and receive their adorations in person, he pulled the cord, and let the animal loose, who, glad to be delivered from his confinement, gave a sudden spring upon the middle of the table.

The effect which the sight of such a visitor had upon them may be better conceived than expressed. Their attention had been so fixed upon what my master was saying, that they perceived not from whence he came; and his appearing so critically at the invocation, and in such a shape, made them conclude he was *the Being invoked*. Terrified out of their senses by this thought, they all roared out with one voice, *The devil! the devil!* and starting from their seats, made directly towards the door, tumbling over one another, and over-setting every thing in their way.

In the height of this uproar and confusion, the baboon, frightened at the effects of their fear, happened to leap upon my master's shoulders, as he lay sprawling on the floor, who, turning about his head at feeling the shock, saw the animal grinning horribly at him, and concluded the devil had obeyed his summons in good earnest, and come to carry him bodily away. Driven as he was to despair by this thought, he strove, however, in the instinctive impulse of self preservation, to shake off the invader; but he,

he, instead of loosing his hold on his repeated efforts, only clung to him the closer, clasping his paws around his neck, and chattering with spite at his ear. This completed the catiff's distress. Every shadow of spirit failed him, and conscious guilt suggesting to him the meaning of this unintelligible jargon, he attempted, in the blindness of his fear, to move the very devil to pity, by his pathetic wailings and supplications.

'Spare me, gracious devil!' said he, 'spare a wretch, who never was sincerely your servant! I sinned only from vanity of being in the fashion! thou knowest I never have been half so wicked as I pretended; never have been able to commit the thousandth part of the vices which I have boasted of. Take not, then, the advantage of that vanity; but judge me only from my actions. I knew not that thou wouldst have come, or I should never have invoked thee! Leave me, therefore, and go to those who are more truly devoted to thy service. I am but half a sinner. My conscience always flew in my face when I committed any crime! My heart gave the lie to my tongue, when I gloried in my vices; and I trembled at the damnation I affected to brave! O spare me, therefore, at least for this time, till I have served thee better. I am as yet but half a sinner.'

CHAP. XXI.

The devil is degraded to a baboon, and his appearance well accounted for, which restores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of Chrysal's master, who exerts himself to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled baboon is traced next day to his introducer, who at the instance of Chrysal's master is expelled the society, for presuming to ridicule their rites. Further consequences of this affair make the superior break up his monastery, and build a church.

WHILE my master was making this essay of his eloquence upon the baboon, the person who had brought him there took the opportunity of the consternation the whole company was in, to open one of the windows unperceived by them, for the animal to make

his escape, which he no sooner saw, than he made directly to it, giving my master a happy release.

Before he could get clear off, though, one of the company, who was bolder than the rest, having mustered resolution to raise his head, got a full view of him, and perceiving what he was, just as my master concluded his supplications, ‘Your prayers are heard!’ said he, starting up, and speaking, as soon as a burst of laughter gave him utterance, ‘your prayers are heard for this time; and that devil of a great he-baboon, that’s just gone out of the window, despising *half a sinner*, has spared you, till you are fitter for his service.’

At hearing these words, they all arose from the floor, where they had lain sprawling on top of one another, and looking in amazement at him who had spoke them, ‘Courage, my friends!’ said he, ‘this is but a false alarm! our *master* is not so ready to come for us when we call him, or we should none of us all be here now. How a baboon, though, should come here, to scare us all out of our little wits in such a manner, the devil may tell you, if he will, for I cannot; but I swear I saw one go out of that window.’—‘And I’ll swear, too, that I saw him come in at it;’ replied the author of the mischief, who saw no way to escape detection, but by preventing further inquiry by this bold lie, ‘as I just then happened to look about, to see from whence the wind came that blew upon my poll.’

This eclaircissement satisfied them all; they instantly set the room to rights, and plastering up their broken shins and noses, sat down to conclude their carousal, resuming their former strain, in which they all exerted themselves in an uncommon manner, to wipe off the disgrace of their late squeaking, particularly my master, who out-did his usual out-doing, in profaneness, blasphemy, and wickedness of every kind, to recover his character, and convince them he was more than *half a sinner*.

They held in this hand, till nature sunk under the fatigue, when they retired, to sleep off their debauch in their *cells*, where, as I said, proper provision had been made

made for them, to reduce the theory of the day into practice, in the intervals of rest. Though the affair of the baboon had passed off so cleverly while their spirits were in such a flurry, when they came to inquire more coolly into it next day, the whole trick came out. It had been impossible to convey him into the monastery, without the privacy of some of the servants, who had so often felt the jests of this gentleman, that they were glad of an opportunity of being revenged upon him now, by making the discovery. This account, confirmed by some circumstances in his behaviour, which they had not attended to at the time, plainly pointing out the guilty person, the superiors adjourned directly to the chapel, to consult how they should proceed on so delicate an occasion. For, though they had always highly approved of such *wit*, when *practised* upon others, they looked upon the application of it to themselves in the most heinous light, especially in such an instance as this, the consequences of which had exposed them to the contempt of each other, by detecting their *weakness*, and showing that the guilt in which they gloried was only feigned. Mortifying as this was to their vanity, the thought, however, that the case was general, afforded some consolation. However, to remedy the effect of this, and prevent a repetition of the like disgrace, it was proposed, after mature deliberation, and much learned argument on the question, to bury what was past, by a solemn act of amnesty, and make a special law, whose observation should be enforced *by an oath*, that no member should ever after presume to attempt exercising his wit upon the society, in any manner, or by any means whatsoever; on taking which oath, and asking pardon upon his knees, at the door of the chapel, the offender should be forgiven.

To this proposal, they all assented, except my master, who for private reasons thought the latter part of it much too mild for so flagrant a crime. He had long cherished a secret grudge against the other, who not only often pointed his wit against him, in a manner that he could not digest, nor knew how to resent, it being as polite as

it was keen, but also put him constantly to the expence of double wickedness, the only qualification in which he could possibly shine, to avoid being totally eclipsed by him: his desire of revenge also was strongest on this occasion, as he had suffered the deepest disgrace.

Accordingly, he exerted all his eloquence, to show the enormity of the crime of attempting to turn any of the rites and ceremonies established by the laws of the society into ridicule; the letting of which escape without adequate punishment, he said, would argue weakness, and want of spirit in them, and must end in the ruin of their authority: for which weighty reasons he proposed that the offender should be directly expelled the society in form, as the only effectual way to vindicate their dignity, and prevent others from offering it the like insult for the future. This gave the affair a new turn. They all took fire at the thought of their dignities being insulted, and expelled him that moment, without even waiting to hear him in his own defence. But he soon had the satisfaction of seeing himself amply avenged. The care they took to keep every thing they did secret had long awoken the curiosity of the neighbourhood, who were the more severe in their guesses the less able they were to guess right. But the affair of the baboon, whom the servants got sight of, before he could be caught, and whether misled by his dress, or misrepresenting by design, gave out to be *the devil*, was no sooner known, than a formal story was propagated over the whole country that the end of their meeting was to worship the devil, to whom this chapel was dedicated, and who had *often* been seen among them in a variety of shapes.

Scandal always meets easy credit. The story was believed by many, and repeated by more, as if they believed it, never losing any thing in the repetition; till such an universal alarm was raised among the people (who are content to infringe the precepts of religion, without denying its authority) that the superior, whose seat was in the neighbourhood, found it necessary to dissolve the society, and effacing every trace of it, convert the building
to

to the better use of a pleasure house, in which he entertained all his neighbours in general, whenever he was in the country: beside which, he also built a church, on an eminence near his house, that answered the double purpose of convincing the populace of his regard to religion, and of making a beautiful termination to a vista which he had just cut through a wood in his park.

I have anticipated these circumstances, to satisfy your curiosity; as I have also omitted many and softened more particulars in this account, which were too horrid to have been represented in their proper colours.

CHAP. XXII.

A further account of the rules of the convent; with some striking instances of œconomy. A seeming inconsistency accounted for from a principle not sufficiently understood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reason of the abuse of wealth.

YOU are astonished how such scenes of debauchery and excess could be supported, either by the fortune of the entertainer, or the constitutions of his guests; but this shall be explained.

To prevent satiety or fatigue, these meetings were never protracted beyond a week at a time; nor held oftener than twice in a year; by which frugality of pleasure, they were always returned to with the keenness of novelty. And as for the expence of them, that was defrayed jointly by the whole community (the superior contributing nothing more than any other member, except the first cost of building the *convent*, which he thought himself amply recompensed for, by the honour of having struck out the plan;) and regulated by the strictest œconomy; the slaves of their lusts being sent back to the brothels from whence they had been brought; and the servants of their luxury discharged, at the end of every meeting; and no more retained for the rest of the year, than an old man and woman, who took care of the place. To you, who have supported the dignity of your nature, by preferring the pleasures of that reason, which was given to distinguish man from brutes, to those of sense, which they enjoy

joy in common with him, the picture of this whole scene must appear over-charged, and irreconcilable with the great principles of human action, which always propose some good, either present or future, however the judgment may err in the thing proposed. But more acquaintance with life would solve this difficulty to you. The general motive for attempting to turn religion into ridicule has been already explained. But as some are seen to give into this practice, who seem to cultivate their reason with most success; and whose actions, and even inclinations, appear not to have the remotest tendency contrary to moral virtue, it may be proper to account for such an exception.

The first principle of action, impressed by nature on every thing that lives, is *self-preservation*. From this, *brute* animals, which *by necessity* proceed regularly in the course prescribed for them, never swerve: but the *rational* animal, man, bewildered in his own imaginations by the abuse of that liberty, which was given him to enhance the merit of his obedience to the dictates of reason, often substitutes another in its place, by whose impulse he acts in direct opposition to it. This is *vanity*! the real source of that ambition which courts danger, and plunges with open eyes into destruction, however speciously it may be disguised under the pompous titles of love of glory, and regard to the public good; as well as of most of the extravagancies and absurdities which puzzle superficial observers, and make them presumptuously impeach, as a defect in the work of nature, their own neglect, and perversion of its laws.

A particular inquiry into the effects of this *supposititious* principle, many of which, as I said, are blazoned as the brightest virtues, while more are acknowledged to be the most atrocious crimes; or how nearly such virtues and crimes proceeding thus from the same source, may be allied, though curious and interesting in itself, is not necessary here. It is sufficient to observe, that its power is able to break the force of habit, reconcile contradictions, and

and confound the essential differences of things ; to cope with prejudice, and over-rule the infirmities of nature.

This it is, for instance, that makes the constitutional coward, who trembles at the thought of danger, and would see his country ruined rather than draw his sword in its defence, fight duels for a doubtful punctilio of empty ceremony ; the superstitious wretch, who finds omens in spilled salt and crossed straws, and sees goblins and devils in the dark, profess infidelity, ridicule providence, and dare the wrath of heaven, by insults and bravadoes ; and lastly, this it is, that makes the hoary sage, whose life has been regulated by the strictest principles of morality and religion, while passion might have rebelled against them, commence libertine in the impotence of old age, and glory in vices he has lost the power to practise. Of the justice of these remarks, the members of this society, of which vanity was the cement, as it had been the origin, afforded the most glaring proofs.

You wonder what there could be to be vain of in such an association ! but you do not reflect, that vanity is never the result of real worth. The false glare of public estimation reflects it from the vilest and most reproachful objects. The institutor of this society was *admired* for every polite accomplishment, every power of pleasing in conversation ; and the first set he chose were all of the same cast. This, with their rank and fortunes, and, above all, the mystery of the institution, which set curiosity on fire, and gave imagination room to form the most flattering ideas of it, made admission into it an object of universal ambition, as it seemed a proof of every member's meriting the same character ; and when once admitted, a vicious fear of ridicule made too many ashamed to quit it ; and even they who did were precluded from discovering any thing that might deter others, by the secrecy to which they were sworn.

There is one thing more, which from the particular circumstances of your own life affects you more than any other in this account. This is the folly and ingratitude of lavishing the blessing of wealth to the dishonour of the donor ;

donor; and with so little regard to its real use. But this, as has been the case in other instances, proceeds from want of better acquaintance with life.

It has been remarked by travellers, that in those parts of the earth, where the blessings of nature are bestowed with the greatest liberality, the people seem least sensible of them, and are sunk in the grossest vice; as if reason and virtue were incompatible with the good things of this world. The reason of this remark holds with respect to wealth in other countries. Provided to profusion with every thing they want, the rich look no further than to the gratification of their appetites and passions; as the means to procure which are in their possession, they acknowledge no obligation to the power which first gave, and still preserves the enjoyment of them; but, on the contrary, affect to show their independence, by prostituting it to purposes directly contrary to his declared pleasure; and this causes that abuse of wealth, which generally mars the blessing, and makes the gift of it so dangerous.

CHAP. XXIII.

Account of the members of the society. The history of the superior. The particular qualifications by which he arose in life. Success in a private instance encourages him to try his talents in an higher sphere, from which he soon descends with disgrace. A striking inconsistency in his character.

I See you desire to have some account of the several members of so extraordinary a society. When the great lines which distinguish the characters of mankind are marked by virtues, or even by superior abilities, that dazzle superficial observation by the splendour of their effects, and pass for such, however different in the tendency of their exertions, the delineation affords pleasure; but, on the contrary, where those lines are all distorted by vice and folly, and distinguished from each other only by different modes and degrees of them, the contemplation is a pain; and to paint them a task so disagreeable, that nothing but an impartial regard to truth could make it be undertaken. However, your curiosity shall be gratified.

As

As the convent was dedicated to pleasure, you may imagine that play made a part of their entertainment. Contrary, indeed, to the scheme of all other parties of pleasure, it was not the first object of their meeting; and only served to fill up the intervals between other pleasures, which nature, without some respite, could not support in such excess. The circulation, however, even in this piddling for mere amusement, gave me an opportunity of taking a view of all their characters; such of which as contained any thing worthy of your notice, for you must not expect it from them all, I will give you some general sketches of. As the looks of a man are generally a comment on his heart, I will place the whole company in your view, as I have done on other occasions, to assist you in forming a proper notion of their characters. At the head of the table sits the superior. You see every eye is expressively fixed upon him, in admiration at the vivacity, humour, and wit in all he says, while, by an art peculiarly happy, he alone seems unconscious of his own pre-eminence. These talents, which, from the intoxication of present applause, are much oftener of prejudice than advantage to the possessor, by diverting from more solid pursuits, proved the foundation of his exalted rank and fortune; because always directed by the deepest and most delicate address. The first instance in which this address was displayed, was in his own family. He had a distant relation, who had spent his youth in such busy scenes, as left not time for his imagination to wander in search of amusement. To a mind unaccustomed to be wound up to such a pitch, the charms of a conversation like his were a relaxation irresistibly engaging. He insinuated himself insensibly into his favour, and by seeming to have nothing in view but his pleasure, led him as he pleased himself, not only into all the lengths of his own libertinism, so as to be a member of this society, when the decline of life, at least, should have suggested more serious thoughts; but also at his death to reward his complaisance with a much larger portion of his fortune than he had any claim to, from consanguinity, or the preference of reason. Such

Such success encouraged his ambition to higher attempt. Introduced by the same qualifications to the acquaintance of the great, he not only gained their favour by them, but also imposed them upon them for abilities of an higher class so far, that being secure of his subserviency to their designs, they admitted him to a share of their power. But in this he had deceived himself, as well as them; he found to their disappointment, and his own extreme confusion, upon the very first trial of his political talents, when he showed in the strongest light the difference between the abilities requisite to raise a laugh, and rule a nation. He had sense enough, however, to see his mistake, before it had involved him in any consequences from which he could not recede without danger as well as disgrace; and prudently sacrificing his ambition to his safety, he turned off all with a laugh, and returned to the enjoyment of those pleasures, for which nature seemed to have so particularly designed him. Whether that enjoyment is as sincere and undisturbed, though, as should appear from his looks and conduct, is a point not so certain as you may be apt to imagine.

The principles on which this society was originally instituted, and from which it has never deviated, the professed ridicule of moral virtue and religion, should seem to have proceeded from an utter disbelief of a Deity; or, at least, a fearless defiance of his power; but, contrary to this, there starts not at his own shadow a more abject slave to superstition, and all its foolish fears, than he was at the time of his instituting it, and still remains. Such an inconsistency requires explanation to you, whose notions of life are formed solely from rational speculation.

CHAP. XXIV.

Continuation of the history of the superior. The inconsistency in his character accounted for. The reason of his being sent early to travel for education. Political principles all necessary to be attended to in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to instruct him in religion. A frightful story gives rise to a frightful dream, which is interrupted still more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a swoon. Account of the apparition.

THE

THE political principles of his family being in avowed opposition to their sovereign, the earliest care was taken to instil the same unto him ; and the ripeness of his parts and genius flattered them with a promise of his future consequence in the state. For this purpose, before reason should have time to be convinced by experience of the injustice and danger of such designs, he was sent abroad, to be educated in a country where every object should concur to prejudice him against the laws and constitution of his own, and the opportunity of personal intercourse confirm his attachment to him whose interest he was intended to promote. The public conduct of his life has sufficiently shown the success of this scheme ; as an incidental circumstance in the execution of it will also account for the inconsistencies in his private character.

The religious principles established in the country whither he was thus sent for education, and the political ones it was designed he should assist to establish at home, were so intimately and essentially connected, that it was impossible to find a tutor for him sufficiently attached to the latter to answer the purpose of his family, who was not also at least secretly inclined to, even if he did not openly profess, the former. But this made no difficulty. Religion is, in reality, the thing least thought of, however pompously it may be professed in political schemes. They scrupled not, therefore, to commit his tender mind to the influence of such an one, regardless what impressions he might make upon it, beside those they desired—an opportunity which he did not fail to take advantage of. Accordingly, as soon as the tutor and his pupil were settled in the place of their designation, the former began his designs by displaying on every occasion the excellence and importance of the ceremonies and rites of the religion professed there, as the objects most likely to strike the levity of youth, always complaining with a contemptuous concern of the want of such in that of his own country ; not choosing to speak more directly at first, for fear of giving him any alarm. But, artful as this method was, he had the disappointment to see it did not succeed so
H well

well as he could wish. Though, from the manner of his pupil's earliest education, it was easy enough to sink his own religion in his opinion, yet some circumstances rendered the raising of any other in its place a matter of more difficulty than might have been obviously apprehended. His natural quickness and turn for ridicule made him see every thing in the most disadvantageous light at the first glance, at the same time that his dissipation and levity prevented his attending to the abstruser arguments, often necessary to establish the credit of matters of such importance beyond the reach of rational doubt; so that all the pains his tutor was piously taking to enlarge his faith, threatened to work the contrary effect, of making him an infidel. Alarmed at this, the tutor, whose bigotted credulity had swallowed every fiction of superstition, had always some miraculous story of a judgment or apparition ready to refute the scoffs of his pupil, and confirm the truth of whatever he himself advanced. The constant repetition of such tales, which he plainly showed his own belief of, insensibly made such an impression on his pupil's imagination, as persuaded him of their possibility at least, if he was not absolutely convinced of the truth of every thing in proof of which they were alledged; and filled him with fears, for which a good foundation had before been laid in the nursery.

When his mind was thus prepared to catch at every terror, his tutor took him one day to see the exhibition of one of those miracles, which are said to be wrought at the shrine of a contested saint; and which really weaken the credit of the religion they were devised to support.

The absurdity was too striking to escape his observation. He turned it into the most poignant ridicule, in spite of all his tutor's pains to defend it; who, finding that his arguments had no effect, had recourse to his usual proof of an *apparition*, which he dressed up in every colour and circumstance of horror, to make it have the greater weight. His pupil took not more than usual notice of the matter, while light and company diverted his thoughts; but when he went to bed, and found himself alone,

alone, and in the dark, the whole flashed upon him in all its terrors, heightened in every instance by the liveliness of his own imagination.

What he felt in such a situation may easier be conceived than expressed. He covered up his head with the clothes; and lay sweating and trembling, till his mind was wearied with dwelling on the same thoughts, and he sunk into a kind of slumber. But this was far from giving him relief. He was no sooner asleep, than imagination, now in her own empire, placed him in the midst of the scene which had just before been so elaborately described to him by his tutor, from the contemplation of which he was delivered only to suffer still more severely; being awakened by sounds uncouth enough to startle, at such a time, the most resolute mind unacquainted with them.

Such a continuation realized all the horrors of his dream. He started up; and turning in the instinctive curiosity of affright to that part of the room from whence the sounds still continued to come, saw four glaring eye-balls fixed upon him, at the same time that a voice distinctly articulated, but in a tremendous tone, and language which he did not understand, thundered directly in his ear.

The darkness, which prevented his seeing the bodies to which those eyes belonged, and his ignorance of the imports of the sounds, only added to his fright, by giving room to imagination, not only to form the most horrible conceptions of them, but also to apprehend them still more horrible than he could conceive. He was not able to support such an attack; but giving one helpless shriek, sunk back in a swoon. His tutor, who lay in the next room, and had been awakened by the same sounds, but was not so much terrified at them, both because his mind was not so well prepared for terrors, and that he was acquainted with their cause, heard him shriek, and knowing his voice, ran to him, imagining he was engaged in a conflict, in which he might want assistance, with the cats which he heard in his room; for, from two of these animals, which, finding the window open, had chosen it for

the scene of their amours, had those dreadful sounds proceeded.

CHAP. XXV.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a swoon. He recovers; and terrifies his tutor, by mistaking him for a saint. Charity begins at home. The tutor sagaciously guesses at the meaning of the mistake; and piously resolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honest addition to it. His repentance and conversion. His tutor moderates his zeal, for weighty reasons. He relapses; and his tutor, for private reasons, divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the story.

YOU may judge how he was affected at seeing the person, upon whom all his hopes of wealth and preferment were founded, in such a situation. Awkward at the best, he now knew not how to attempt giving him any assistance, nor had even the presence of mind to call any one who could, so great was his embarrassment and confusion. Nature, however, soon delivered him from his distress, and restored his hopes, by the recovery of his pupil.

As soon as he came a little to himself, he stared wildly round him for some moments, and then fixing his eyes upon his tutor, who still stood gaping in amazement at him, he mistook him, from his being in his shirt, for the saint that ran in his head, his imagination still continuing the former scene, and holding up his hands in a suppliant posture, as he lay trembling on his back, ‘O mercy, gracious saint!’ said he. ‘Have mercy on my youth! never will I again presume to ridicule any of the sacred rites of religion! never will I admit a doubt of any thing it commands me to believe! O mercy! O mercy!’—Saying which words he fainted away again.

This address, one word of which the tutor did not understand, threw him into a fright almost as great as that of his pupil. He stood, for some time, stupified by astonishment, till the cold reminding him that he was in his shirt, care for his own health conquered every other concern,

concern, and made him go to put on his clothes, before he attempted to do any thing for the other. While he was dressing himself, he considered what his pupil had said with rather more attention than his fear had permitted him before, and recollecting the subject of their conversation the preceding evening, concluded that heaven had made use of some supernatural means to subdue his infidelity, the impression of which remaining still upon his mind, had occasioned his mistaking him, in the manner he did, for a saint (for that he should be terrified to that degree by the screaming of the cats never came into his head :) and piously resolved to contribute his assistance to the deception, by taking no notice that he had been with him before, or even denying it, if he saw occasion. With this intention he returned to his pupil, determined, though, not to disclose his suspicion, till the other should make some discovery to direct him more certainly how to proceed.

His pupil, who was just come to himself, knew him directly, now he was dressed, and catching his hand eagerly, as soon as he came within his reach, ‘O my dearest, my best friend!’ said he, pressing it to his lips, ‘what have I suffered since I saw you? How dearly have I paid for that profaneness and infidelity for which you have so often reproved me, with pious and paternal care. But never will I be guilty of the like again. I resign myself implicitly to your direction, and will, from this hour, believe every thing you require me.’—

His tutor, after giving him some spiritual comfort, and encouraging his perseverance in this pious resolution, desired to know what had been the happy occasion of it, to which the other answered, that some little time after he went to bed, the room was suddenly enlightened, in a manner not to be described, when the apparition, of which he had given him an account the evening before, stood before him, wrapped in blue flames, and breathing smoke and sulphur; and calling to him in a voice that appalled his soul, denounced heaven’s vengeance against his infidelity, which he was just going to put in execution, when

the holy saint, whose miracles he had so impiously turned into ridicule, appeared all robed in white, and circled round with glory; and interposing between him and the spectre, the latter gave a shriek that shook the room, and then vanished in a flame of fire; upon which the saint turned to him, with a look ineffably benign, and exhorting him to repentance, gave him his benediction, and disappeared.

Ready as his tutor was to believe every thing that exceeded belief, when alledged in the cause of religion, the circumstance of himself having been mistaken for a saint staggered his faith in all the rest, and made him for once justly conclude, that the whole miracle was no more than a fiction of that fear with which the screaming of the cats struck him in his sleep, for he now plainly traced the effects of their voices. However, far from undeceiving him, he improved upon the thought; and, as soon as his pupil concluded his tale, with a grave face and solemn air, added a sequel to it, of equal truth, but dictated by a very different degree of veracity; the former being deceived himself, and having eked out the illusions of his fear, as distracted imagination suggested to him; whereas the latter aggravated those illusions by untruths premeditatedly devised to confirm that deception. He said, that, grieved at the danger with which an unhappy prejudice of education threatened the spiritual safety of one so dear to him, instead of lying down to rest, he had fallen upon his knees, and poured out his soul in prayer and supplication to heaven, to enlighten his pupil's mind, and convince him of his errors, in which holy exercise he had continued ever since, till this moment, when, in the impulse of a persuasion, which he now perceived to have been divinely inspired, that his prayers were heard, he came to satisfy himself of the reality of so miraculous an event, for which he begged him to join in returning immediate thanks to heaven, and the blessed saint who had wrought it.

This completed the deception of his pupil, so far as to make him believe the truth of some parts of his own tale,

tale, which he was not altogether so certain of before. He arose, therefore, and reconciling himself to the faith of his tutor, by the strongest and most full professions, dedicated the remainder of the night with him to prayer and pious conversation.

In the first heat of his devotion, he was for making the whole affair public, and openly joining himself to that religion, whose truth was thus confirmed to him. But his tutor moderated the fervency of his zeal, sensible that such a step would not only defeat the political designs of his friends, which must be carried on under a masque, and in whose success his own wishes were most warmly interested; but also overturn his own hopes of being well rewarded for the care of his education, by a church-living of great revenue, that was in the gift of one of his pupil's relations, who had promised it to him, as soon as the incumbent, then sinking under all the infirmities of extreme old age, should die: for his religious principles never interfered with his interest. For these most weighty reasons, though, as you may imagine, he communicated only the former, he prevailed upon his convert to be content with the private practice, without the profession of his new faith, till he should, in the fulness of time, be so happy as to contribute his assistance to the great event, which should establish it in his own country.

Such an argument could not fail of effect upon one who found the fervour of his devotion cool so fast, that in a few days the whole matter was entirely reversed, and his practice as libertine as ever, though fear of seeing any more spectres restrained his professions within more decent bounds. For, so deeply was the dread of them imprinted on his mind, that to this day he dares not to sleep by himself, or be a moment alone in the dark: though his tutor, soon after his return home, divulged the whole affair, as far as it affected not himself, with the addition of many circumstances, if possible, still more contemptibly ridiculous than the true, to revenge his procuring the living for one of his raking companions, and ingratiate himself with a particular enemy of his, from whom he
expected

expected a recompence for so pleasing a piece of scandal ; to invalidate which was one of his pupil's motives for instituting this society.

CHAP. XXVI.

Account of the members continued. History of one who turned libertine in speculation, after he had lost the power of being so in practice. How this happened ; the force of literary vanity ; and the reason why it is stronger than any other. Instances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is successful where all others had failed, and by a master-stroke makes vanity gain a signal triumph over virtue.

AT the right hand of the superior you see one, whose example should be a warning to mankind never to be off their guard against the allurements of vice, while there is any possibility, however remote and improbable, of their falling into it. While youth might have been pleaded in excuse of passion ; and the busy application of manhood extenuated any speculative errors in opinion, his conduct had been regulated by the strictest regard to the principles of moral virtue, and the precepts of religion. But in the evening of his days, when all that heat and hurry gave place to cool reflection, and the serenity of the prospect more than compensates for its approaching close, the whole scene was wretchedly reversed, and his setting sun over-cast with a cloud of vices most blameable in any stage of life, but aggravated ten thousand-fold in his, to which they were unnatural.

I have told you before, that vanity was the cause of a fall, so reproachful to humanity ; The manner, though, of its operating upon one who seemed to be removed so far beyond its reach is worthy of attention. In no instance is the power of vanity so tyrannically exerted over the human heart, as when it arises from an opinion of literary merit. The reason is obvious. Real learning is the most effectual check to vanity, as it shows the instability of its foundation. When, therefore, any thing that makes pretence, however falsely, to that name, seems to administer to its support, it instantly looks upon itself as above control.

control. Though early engagement in the active scenes of his country's service had prevented his making any great proficiency in the more abstruse pursuits of speculation, his natural inclination to them, directed by a taste formed by the best education, made him embrace all opportunities of patronizing every advance in science, and improvement in the finer arts. The liberality with which he indulged this inclination soon marked him out to the attacks of every needy adventurer in the trade of letters. Projectors consulted him on their schemes. Poets submitted their works to his correction. His virtues, among which munificence was never forgot, were the inexhausted theme of panegyric; and dedications declared to the world his abilities and knowledge. Adulation so gross was an affront to reason. He rejected, with just contempt, the praises to which he knew himself not entitled; and was superior to the flattery, which compassion for the flatterer often made him seem to pay for. Happy had he always preserved the same delicacy.

Among the crowds of parasites, who lay in wait thus for his favour, was a person, whom idleness seduced to prefer this abject state of dependence to the pursuit of a liberal profession, which he had been bred to.—A baseness aggravated by his possessing every qualification necessary to have made him eminent in any state. This man, who had thoroughly studied the human heart, soon saw that any direct attack upon his patron would prove ineffectual. He, therefore, struck out a new scheme, the depth of which secured it from detection, though, at the same time, the difficulty of carrying it into execution would have discouraged any one, less anxious for success, and less confident of his own abilities. He disguised the strongest flattery under the masque of the most cynical bluntness and candour; and instead of praising all he did, and echoing in assent every word he spoke, he missed no occasion of differing in opinion with him, declaring he thought that being, who could debase the dignity of his nature so far as to give up his judgment to another,
from

from any other motive than rational conviction, unworthy of the name of man.

A behaviour so singular necessarily attracted the notice of his patron, as the manner in which it was carried on soon won his favour: For in all the debates of any moment, which this champion for liberty of thought held with him, he managed with such delicate art, as to lead him (his patron) to confute him, though frequently contrary to the opinion with which he had originally set out. In trifles indeed, where being foiled could reflect no disgrace, he proceeded not with that caution, but often gained a victory, for which he laughed at himself when it was won. But with others he observed not such moderation. Be the subject what it would, he exerted all his powers (and great as I have said they were) till he silenced, at least, if he could not convince, his adversary, over whom he then triumphed in all the insolence of superiority.

Such a method could not fail of success! His patron, sure of coming off with honour, sought every opportunity of entering into debate with him, and contracted an esteem for one who, as he thought, had thus discovered to him his own abilities, while every one else declined entering into a contest, which always involved them in disgrace. Encouraged by this success, he boldly ventured upon a stroke, the event of which was to decide his hopes. In gratification to his own depraved taste, he had written a treatise, in which the grossest libertinism was set in so advantageous and alluring a light, and the arguments against it evaded with so much plausibility and true wit, as were almost sufficient to put virtue out of countenance, and debauch its sincerest votaries. The contradiction between such principles and the practice of his patron, through his whole life, would have deterred any one less enterprising and experienced in the weaknesses of human nature, from disclosing them; but he had lately made some discoveries, which emboldened him even to push his designs much farther, than owning himself the author of that book.

While the vigour of life had enabled his patron to per-
sist

list in busier pursuits, he had despised the flattery paid to his literary merits; but as soon as the infirmities of age rendered him unfit for such employment, he, with a natural partiality, gave the preference to that pre-eminence which he thought still within his reach, and affected to slight all fame, that was not founded on the nobler labours of the mind. This was a sufficient direction to the parasite. He immediately showed his book, with a mysterious air, to several of his patron's friends, giving them broad hints at the same time, but under the seal of secrecy, that he was the author of it. There is no way so effectual as this to spread any story. One whispered it to another, till, in a few days, the whole town was in the secret.

The hints and allusions which were every hour thrown out to the patron, on this occasion, perplexed him not a little, as he knew not what they meant. A secret, though in the possession of so many, could not possibly remain long such to him. One of his acquaintances, provoked at the seeming affectation of his not understanding his hints, told him the whole affair.

Much as he was surprised at the account, vanity would not let him suppress it by a direct negative, as the book was mentioned in terms of the highest praise. He answered with the coy evasions of modesty, the most effectual affirmation, and shifted off any further discussion of the subject, till he should be better informed. Accordingly, the moment his friend left him, he sent for the author of the report, and charging him with it, desired to see the performance which he had done him the honour to father upon him. The parasite, who took his cue from the looks of his patron, was far from denying the charge. He presented him the book without hesitation, saying, with his usual bluntness, that if it was not actually written by him, it was literally written from him, being nothing but what he had frequently said on those subjects; and, therefore, might without any injustice be asserted to be his.

The advantageous manner in which the patron had heard the book spoken of prevented his making any reply,

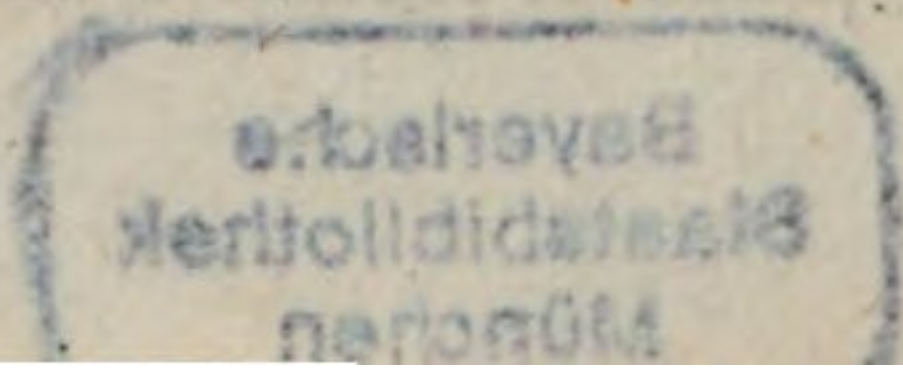
ply, till he should have read it, when he was so struck with the various beauties of it, that vanity subdued all his virtue, and deprived him of the power of denying it. 'If the sentiments are mine!' said he, blushing at his own baseness, as he spoke, 'I am obliged to you for placing them in so advantageous a light; and think I ought to decline sharing in an honour, so much of which belongs to another.'——

Such a repulse was no way discouraging. The parasite repeated his assertion that the whole was genuinely his, both in words and sentiments, as indeed he knew not any other whose they could be; and insisting that he had no more merit in the affair, than barely that of writing them down, a liberty for which he begged pardon, appealed to his former conduct to acquit him of so mean a piece of flattery, as giving to another the honour of a work, which had not its equal.

It is not difficult to persuade a willing mind. The patron could no longer deny what was so clearly proved; and what his own conscience bore testimony to, against his false modesty. All that remained was to act in such a manner, that his practice should not contradict this declaration of his principles; and so raise a doubt of their authenticity. But after having made the first step, he found no difficulty in this. He directly changed the whole tenor of his life. He laughed at morality, ridiculed religion, and professed vices he was unable to practice: and lastly, to complete his character, procured admission into this society, which, as I said, was the proof of every polite accomplishment and qualification; where he nods, as you see, over the grave, as insensible to the mirth and pleasures enjoyed by his companions, as of the despicableness and danger of his own situation.

As for his parasite, his end was gained. From that moment he commanded him as he pleased, sharing in the enjoyment of his fortune while he lived; and sure of such a portion of it, if he survived him, as should sufficiently supply his appetites, the only use for which he desired a fortune.

CHAP.



Chrysal continues the account of the members. The history of a remarkable person is given for a remarkable reason. His pleasures bring him into distress, from which he extricates himself by making them subservient to his interest, and gets into a good keeping. Not content with the mother, he casts his eye upon the daughter also, but is disappointed, and forced to take up with a share of her fortune, for procuring her in marriage for another. He resolves to be a great man, and for that purpose breaks with his keeper.

ONE of the most specious arguments alledged against the obligation to virtue, is the success that is often observed to attend the violation of it, in the general pursuits of the world. Of this you see the strongest instance which this age has afforded, in that man who sits at the left hand of the superior, wrapped up in the consciousness of his own importance, and smiling contemptuously at the company around him, while they believe he is joining in their mirth.

A particular account of his life would lead into too great a length. It would seem a satire on mankind, rather than a detail of the actions of one man. However, as a short sketch of it may be of advantage, by unveiling this mystery in the conduct of heaven, and proving the insufficiency of the highest prosperity to confer happiness, even in the hour of attainment, when that prosperity is not founded in and procured by virtue, I will just run over the great heads of his story, with that brevity which the disagreeableness of the subject naturally dictates.

The opening of his life gave no prospect of his exalted station. Pleasure in every licentious excess soon dissipated a small patrimony; and he was hardly entered into man's estate, when want, of his own earning, began to stare him in the face. The peculiar cast of a man's mind is in nothing more strongly shewn, than in the expedients he has recourse to, in order to extricate himself from difficulties. Instead of quitting the vices which had brought him into this embarrassment, he resolved on the first alarm to build his hopes of fortune on them, by pursuing them

in a different manner. Experienced in all the mysteries of intrigue, he knew that age and deformity will purchase pleasures, for which youth and beauty expect to be flattered, if not even paid. Unrestrained, therefore, by any scruples of honour or conscience, he directly determined to fix upon some wealthy female of the former class, and never doubted making her passion repay him manifold what he had expended on the gratification of his own. This hopeful scheme was no sooner formed, than carried into execution. As his character gained him easy access to all such as were proper for his purpose, he immediately singled out an old dowager, in whose disposal the dotage of a dying husband had left the accumulated wealth of several ages of successful industry. Such a quarry engaged all his attention in the pursuit. He paid his addresses to her, though destitute of every thing that could raise natural desire, with so much assiduity and warmth, that she readily received him into her good graces; and, *in return for the pleasure she found in his conversation*, lavished her fortune upon him with a profusion that even exceeded his hopes.

From the principle on which he set out, it may be judged that he did not neglect to improve such an opportunity of repairing his broken fortune, and laying up a fund for a future day, out of the overflowings of her untimely fondness. But, unbounded as her generosity was, he was far from being content, while any thing further remained possible to be got from her. Beside the great wealth which was directly in her power, a very large estate was by family settlements to descend to an only daughter, whom she had by her husband. As soon, therefore, as her modest lover had got possession of the former, his heart yearned for the latter also, with as much greediness as if his wants were only increased by his acquisitions. But, though he was seldom long at a loss for means to accomplish any thing he had in view, as he was under no restraint from principle in the choice of them, there was an obstacle in his way here, which all the fertility of his genius could not surmount.

This

This was his connexion with the mother, the nature of which he well knew would never let her consent to a scheme destructive of itself; for he had no fear of her making opposition, from motives of honour or virtue, to any thing that did not clash with that, as he found none in his own conscience even to this, though contrary to the first principles of nature. Since he could not, therefore, get the daughter's whole fortune, by marrying her, he resolved to exert his influence on her mother, to give her to some person of his choosing, who should divide it with him, as a recompence for making the match. For this purpose he pitched upon a near relation of his own, who readily gave into his scheme, though possessed himself of a fortune that placed him above the necessity of such meanness. The consent of the guardian mother, as he foresaw, was easily obtained. She was happy in having such an opportunity of proving her regard for him, as well as of removing her daughter out of his reach, his attention to whom, while his first project was in his head, had not escaped her jealous notice.

His share of the prize, added to his other gains, made him now a man of considerable fortune, and fired him with an ambition of making a considerable figure in the state. To accomplish this, the natural turn of his mind suggested it to him to marry into some family, the interest and splendour of which might drown the obscurity of his own original, and assist his hopes. Nor did he apprehend any opposition to this scheme from the same quarter that had defeated the former. He had now gotten from her all that she had to give; and the same principal that prompted him to be the hired drudge of her loose desires, made him find no scruple to leave her service, when she was no longer able to pay the wages of it.

Nothing is easier than to make matter for dispute. On her expressing her resentment, with the haughtiness which she thought the circumstances of the connexion between them gave her a right to assume, as she had on many occasions before, at something he had done with design to provoke her, his *sensibility* took fire, and, in just indignation

nation at treatment so improper for a *man of honour* to submit to, he bound himself by the most dreadful imprecations to shake off so intolerable a yoke for ever, and so flung out of her presence.

Her surprise at a behaviour so different from what he had ever shewn before, suspended her resentment, and she waited with impatience for a repetition of the blandishments with which he had been accustomed to sooth her anger. But, what was her astonishment to find, that instead of making any advances of the kind, he had actually withdrawn himself from her house. This alarmed her. In the arrogance of her former superiority, the loss of which she was not yet sensible of, she sent him a peremptory summons to attend her directly. But her commands had now lost their weight, and she received a refusal, the more cutting for being couched in cool, equivocal politeness. This drew on him an epistolary torrent of upbraidings, expostulations, and at last, of the most tender entreaties; but all were equally ineffectual. He pleaded his rash vow, lamented the cruel obligation of it; and, as she began to be softened by this address, hinted at a sense of religion, and even distantly recommended it to her, as the best consolation under the crosses and afflictions of life.

Such sentiments from him could mean nothing but sneering insult. In that light she took them. However, as the nature of the affair made it impossible for her to open her mind too explicitly, she resolved to play his own game back upon him, and affect to be convinced by arguments of which she hoped to take advantage at a proper time, though in a manner very different from his intention, in applying them.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Continued. He begins his scheme successfully, by stealing a marriage. His late keeper makes an artful demand of all the presents she had given him, which he answers as artfully. He advances in his scheme by steps exactly in his character, and gets into favour with a great person.—*Chrysal* makes some remarks on the origin of the affections of

of the human mind, and the different manner of breeding men and horses, with the consequence.

WHILE she was pleasing herself with this thought, he had carried the most difficult part of his scheme into execution. The passion for play, which marks the character of the present age, though it really counteracts every social virtue, is yet the means of associating all kinds and ranks of people, who have, or even appear to have, money to play for. At meetings for this purpose, he had found means to make an acquaintance with a nobleman, who was so pleased with his conversation, studied designedly to please him, that he admitted him to an intimacy in his family, which he knew so well how to improve with one of his daughters, that, in despite of the disparity of age and rank, he soon prevailed upon her to crown his hopes by a private marriage, as the consent of her family could not be expected. As the immediate fortune of the lady could not be thought an object of mercenary pursuit, when the first emotions of resentment gave place to reflection, his plea of passion was admitted as an excuse for this violation of the sacred laws of hospitality; and his wife's father unknowingly completed his design, by exerting all his interest, which was very great, to advance him in the state.

The secrecy with which it had been necessary for him to conduct this affair, and the rapidity of his success, prevented his late mistress from making any attempt to defeat it. As soon, however, as she recovered from the first stroke of her astonishment at the news of his marriage, she proceeded to put her scheme in execution. Accordingly, she sent him compliments of congratulation on this happy fruit of his conversion, exhorting him to persevere in it; and professed her resolution to imitate his example, and dedicate the remainder of her days to the duties of virtue and religion, as a proof of which she proposed to begin by restoring to her injured daughter as much as possible of the fortune, which the confidence of her husband had left in her power, and she had unhappily
VOL. III. I 3 lavished

lavished in pursuits, to the criminal nature of which he had opened her eyes.

As all that was not dissipated beyond recovery was what she had given to him, and her restoring it, therefore, must depend on his making a restitution to her first, he was not a moment at a loss for the drift of this extraordinary instance of penitence, nor how to treat the account of it. He immediately returned her an answer, congratulating her in his turn, with sincerity equal to her own, on her pious resolutions, the intention of which, he said, would make amends for the impossibility of carrying them into execution, any farther than by stinting herself to the indispensable necessities of life, and laying up the rest of her large income to supply the place of the sums she had expended.

Such an answer necessarily drew on an explanation, and of course a demand of the several presents she had made him in the course of their dalliance, and knew he had laid up, as he lived at her expence all the time. This was no more than he expected. He replied, therefore, without being in the least disconcerted, that he looked upon every thing he had received from her not as presents, but payment for the time he had devoted to attending upon her; and for that reason thought it inconsistent with that regard for justice which is inseparable from true piety, for her to demand such a restitution, especially as she must be sensible that he could not now make it, without doing wrong to his wife, who had an undoubted property in every thing that belonged to him; and concluded with desiring that a correspondence, which might be misunderstood, and so disturb his connubial happiness, might be dropped between them.

This sufficiently explained the motives of his conduct; and the despicable situation which she had brought herself to. However, she was obliged to acquiesce with the best grace she could, without even the poor satisfaction of revenge; for he had taken care to insert in every paragraph of his letters such anecdotes of the connexion that had been between them, that it was impossible for
her

her to show them, in order to expose him, without exposing herself at the same time to the contempt and detestation of the world. From this time, therefore, all intercourse beyond that of common civility was broken off between them; though some consequences of their former connexion, which happened after her death, make one of the most striking parts of his story, as shall be observed in the proper place.

The first essays of a man's disposition indicate the rule by which his whole life will be conducted. The interest of the family into which he had thus stolen had no sooner raised him to some degree of power, than he aspired to the highest, to attain which he resolved to pursue a method exactly in his character. This was to ingratiate himself, he regarded not by what means, with one of the first personages in the state, whose interest he meant to make use of, as long as it could serve him, and then fly in his face to show his independence. Nature had never endowed a man with qualifications fitter for such a purpose. He was every thing, to every man. The gay were struck with his wit; the grave with his solidity; while an appearance of candor and sincerity, that lulled suspicion to sleep, won the confidence of all with whom he conversed; all which powers of pleasing were, by a servility of disposition derived perhaps from a servile birth, prostituted to the humour of those whom he desired to please, however contrary to his own.

I see your curiosity at my saying, that the servility of his disposition might perhaps be derived from a servile birth. You want to have the origin of the affections of the human soul explained, whether they are imprinted on it, at its first emanation, from the source of all existence, or received by traduction from the immediate parents of the body, or only caused by the casual operation of external objects. But this, as I have said in other cases, is a difficulty that I am not at liberty to solve, as the question is not yet determined by the learned; though much ingenious reasoning has been displayed on every side of it. This only I shall say, that the practice of
mankind

mankind seems to contradict the second of these opinions, who show no regard to the dispositions of those on whom they propagate their own species, though they trace back the pedigree of a dog, or an horse, for many generations, for fear of any fault in the breed; the reason you may perhaps imagine, why the brutes fed with such care are found so much seldomer to degenerate than the offspring of the greatest men.

CHAP. XXIX.

Continued. He practises a successful method for gaining the confidence of his new patron, which he turns to good account. History of the lover who succeeded him in the good graces of his late keeper. He strives to prevent his taking advantage of his influence over her; and finding he fails in that, fools him into distress, which brings his life in his power. He slights many motives, which might have had weight with others, and takes advantage of the opportunity to get rid of him, and all further trouble about him. He continues to dupe him till the last moment, when his eyes are opened, and all comes out.

AS soon as he had insinuated himself into the pleasurable liking of his designed patron, by an unwearied exertion of all his powers of pleasing, he directly proceeded, with the nicest art, to improve that liking into an important confidence. He watched his every action, word, and look, till he discovered the peculiar turn of his mind, to which he accommodated his own so implicitly, that the very faculties of his soul seemed to move only by the other's will. They who are above deceit themselves suspect it not in others. That self-love, which is inseparable from humanity, was easily imposed upon by such art. His patron liked himself in him; and insensibly came to think all reserve unnecessary with one, whose soul appeared to be only the shadow of his own. This soon gave him real consequences, as the numbers whom interest or inclination attached to his patron found it necessary to take the lead from him; and enabled him to grasp at every opportunity of engrossing power, and acquiring wealth, to supply those pleasures which he had quitted only

Only from necessity, and returned to again the moment he had the means of obtaining them. But all this torrent of success was not able to divert his attention for a moment from the smallest matter in which his avarice was concerned, as he gave the strongest proof in the following affair ; to explain which I must look back to the woman, whose lavish fondness first raised his fortune, as it happened in consequence of his connexion with her, though some considerable time after her death.

It is observed that habitual indulgence continues the passions proper to youth after the fire that first supplied them is exhausted, and the end for which they were implanted by nature become impossible. Old as this woman was when our hero deserted her, and to appearance as incapable of feeling, as raising, desire, she had so long accustomed herself to the gratification of every sensual appetite, that she could not bear to live without a lover. The difficulty was, how to fix upon a proper object : for as interest was her only attraction, the first glances must necessarily come from her ; and then her prodigality to her last had put it out of her power to make it worth the while of such another as she might like to supply his place. Precluded thus from much delicacy in her choice, necessity directed her to one of her domestics, something in whose circumstances pointed him out more particular to her notice.

There is not a more despicable instance of vanity, than being ashamed of the connexions of nature, because of poverty, when that poverty is not the effect of vice. A far distant female relation had from this vanity bequeathed to her a very considerable fortune, to which this man should have been heir, had not the lowness of his condition, a motive sufficient to have influenced a generous heart in his favour, made her think it would be a disgrace to her to be succeeded by him ; for which reason she wantonly deprived him of the inheritance of his ancestors, to give it to one who did not want it. Dispirited by such unnatural injustice, for which the law afforded no redress, he was no longer able to pursue the industry that
had

had hitherto been his support ; and sunk into such distress, that his despair made him at length throw himself at the feet of her who enjoyed his spoils, to beg relief.

This happened critically at the time when her inclinations for a new lover began to get the better of her grief, for the loss of the last. Softened by what she had herself so lately felt, she pitied his distress ; and as all the tenderer passions are allied, that pity was soon warmed into such love as she was capable of feeling. Accordingly, as she had taken him into her family on his first application, she now entrusted him with the management of her affairs, to give colour for the further intimacy she had in view. The consequence was natural. He readily took hints too plain to be over-looked ; and she kept up *his assiduity in her service*, by some presents in hand, and grants of more, charging most of them, indeed, on the inheritance of his ancestors, which she had settled upon his predecessor in her favour after her death, till when they were not to take place or be discovered, to avoid his reproaches, as well as those of her daughter and her husband for such a repetition of her former follies ; and because she did not choose to straiten her own circumstances, by the immediate payment of them. But these wages of vice, however welcome in his present indigence, proved fatal to him in the end.

The hero of my tale, who saw the rise of this new favourite, and knew from experience on what it must be founded, though she affected to attribute her notice of him to gratitude to his relations, and retributory justice to himself, gave him a genteel and profitable employment under one of the many which he himself enjoyed in the state, professedly in compliment to her, but really to attach him to his own interest, and prevent his exerting his influence on her to obtain such grants as before-mentioned ; for the turn of his own mind made him suspect everything that was possible ; and such is the partiality of man to himself, that he who has been ungrateful to all mankind will yet expect gratitude from others.

Proud of this preferment, which raised his rank in life,
and

and depending on the professions of friendship and promises which his new friend liberally made him, he thought proper at her death not only not to claim her grants for the present, to avoid breaking with him, as he knew must be the consequence, but also to give up to him a particular gift, part of his own alienated inheritance, which he had received publicly from her, as a reward for his services, and trust to his honour for an equivalent return. But that return, when at length it was made, was as far from being equivalent as his promises were from performance, nothing being more contrary to his intentions, than to support his claims to those grants of which he had gotten notice, and judged from his own heart the reason of their being concealed. He continued, therefore, to feed him with promises, which led his vanity into expence, and encouraged him to embark in schemes that he had not a fund to execute, till he fell into distresses, to extricate himself from which he had recourse to means that laid his life at the mercy of this his supposed friend.

There are some crimes, the consequences of which are so dangerous, that no punishment can be too severe to deter from them. One of the worst of these is imitating a man's signature, with a design to deceive. It perpetuates the violation of truth, undermines the security of innocence, and breaks that confidence which is indispensibly necessary to carry on the concerns of life. But, though no circumstance can, in a legal sense, extenuate the heinousness of this crime, there were some in this particular instance which would have deterred any other man from the prosecution of it: it had been committed not with an intention of doing injustice to him, or any other, but to remedy for a time his injustice, by raising apparently the value of the return he had made for the gift of their common benefactress, as I have before observed, nearer to an equality with it, in order to procure present relief from distress, of which he had been, in so many senses, the cause. But all these considerations were of no weight with him, when put in competition with the conveniency of getting rid of one whom he doubly hated,

for

for being privy to his iniquities, and interfering with his interest. He hesitated not a moment, therefore, to make use of an opportunity offered beyond his hopes, and sacrifice him, under the specious appearance of paying obedience to the laws.

In this it was necessary for him to act with the deepest dissimulation, to accomplish his design in its full extent. He professed pity for his misfortunes; and, while he corrupted all in whom the wretch placed confidence to betray him, managed so as to seem to be compelled by law to appear against him, though he might with the greatest ease have avoided it, and buried the whole in silence. Nor did he stop here! his malice seemed to pursue him even beyond the grave; for instead of permitting him to prepare in peace for the approach of fate, he buoyed him up with the hopes of a pardon, to earn which the deluded victim subscribed to every thing dictated to him to blacken his own character, and make void the grants which he had purchased at so dear a rate; and in this infatuation he was kept to the last moment, to prevent his recanting; for which purpose, his nearest friends, and all who might have undeceived him, and administered comfort to his distress in the hour of anguish, were barred admittance to him. But his eyes were opened on the verge of life, and in that awful moment when truth only is spoken, he revoked every thing he had been thus drawn in to say, and asserted the validity of the claims which were the cause of his ruin, so that the whole scheme, laboured with such deep damnation to deceive the world, was defeated.

I see the horror with which you are affected at such a scene; and shall therefore close it with observing, that though he was permitted to perpetrate his crimes, divine justice prevented his reaping the fruits proposed from them; as, beside the immediate price of his blood, it cost him more than he earned by his complicated guilt, to stop the cries of the widow and orphan, and bribe venal defamation to silence, when it was too late, and the mystery of his wickedness was made known to the world.

Continued. A view of his political character introduces a maxim not sufficiently attended to. He fails in a great stroke, and makes so many wrong ones, that he is kicked out of power, and forced to be content with profit, which he pursues through thick and thin. An unhappy event gives him an opportunity of showing his ingratitude to his late patron, on the merit of which he rises to higher power than ever, which he wisely exerts behind the curtain, and leaves his tools to bear the blame. An account of the just fruits of so much success concludes this history.

YOU have hitherto seen him only in private life. I will now give you a glimpse of his political character, which will convince you of a truth, for obvious reasons not sufficiently attended to, which is, that the ruling principles of the heart influence the actions in all capacities; and therefore that it is impossible for a bad man to make a good minister.

The power to which the confidence of his patron raised him was such as might have enabled him to effect either much good or evil, had he known how to have used it to the best advantage. But his eagerness in the pursuit of his own views put him off his usual guard, and discovered his principles before it was too late to oppose them.

The most exalted minds are not exempted from human weaknesses. That of his patron was a thirst of power, though without a thought of using it in any improper manner. Some late services, of the highest importance, which he had performed to the state, suggested to our hero a scheme for rivetting his interest with him still stronger, by procuring him a power which he knew would centre really in himself. Accordingly, he exerted all his abilities and influence to wrest from the sovereign an essential part of the incommunicable power of the crown, and vest it in him. Such an attempt instantly gave the alarm to every real friend, not only of the government, but also of him in whose favour it was professed to be made; who, though they harboured no fear of him, did not dare to offer such an affront to their

sovereign, and give a wound to the political constitution of their country which might be of most dangerous consequence in less safe hands. The design therefore was defeated; and instead of serving his patron, only instilled doubts of him into those who were not acquainted with the uprightness of his heart. Though the interest of his patron continued to support him for a considerable time after this, his whole conduct was such a series of blunders (many of them so gross, that it was doing violence to probability to impute them to ignorance) that at length the voice of the people was raised against him, and he was obliged to give up all pretensions to power, and sit down with an employment of great, but mere profit, which all his own solicitations, though urged with the abject importunity of a common beggar, even to shedding tears, and imploring compassion for his wife and family, all he had hitherto acquired having been squandered, as fast as it came, on his pleasures, would not have procured for him, had not his patron sanguinely espoused his interest, even to the injury of his own; though on a discovery of his principles and private character, now too notorious to be concealed, he rejected him from his esteem, and refused to give any further countenance to his ambition.

From this time he applied every power of his soul to amass wealth, which he had too many opportunities of doing in his present employment, the most iniquitous of which he never failed to improve to still greater iniquity, regardless of public reproach, and the distress of myriads, suffering under his injustice, whose cries and imprecations ascended hourly to heaven against him. Riches give consequence, especially with those who sacrifice every thing to luxury. Though he had no public power, his personal influence over individuals in a short time became greater than ever, as he too soon had an opportunity of proving.

One of those events, which show the vanity of all human designs, however wisely conducted, and glorious in their end, threw the government into other hands. New men always adopt new measures, if only from an affectation.

tation of appearing wiser than their predecessors. In this change his late patron lost all influence, except that which virtue establishes in the hearts of the virtuous. This was an opportunity for shaking off the weight of obligation not to be missed by one of our hero's turn. He not only deserted him directly in the basest manner, but also, to ingratiate himself with the present powers, fathered upon him the fictions of his own brain, under the appearance of betraying his secrets, and made a merit of aggravating his ingratitude and perfidy by open insults, in hope of provoking him to some unguarded act or expression of resentment, which might give advantage against him, by the common trick of applying to the master what is meant to the servant. But for once all his art failed. Confident in conscious innocence and merit, he disdained to give weight to such base machinations by taking notice of them; and receiving this ingratitude as a punishment for having placed his esteem so unworthily, looked down upon him with indignant contempt, nor was ever heard to honour his name with utterance. Such a proof of his sincerity gained our hero the confidence of his new friends, to whose tottering power his personal interest was found a necessary support. But he lent not that support but on his own terms. Cooled by experience, he had learned that the name of power is always pursued by envy and ambition. He, therefore, wisely gratified the vanity of others with the dangerous shadow, while he reserved the substance to himself, dictating in safety, because in secret, all the measures, for any mistake in which they were answerable.

In this situation you see him now. But such a series of success has been far from procuring him the happiness proposed in the pursuit. Recollection of the means imbitters the end. The ingratitude and perfidy of one, whom he had placed his whole confidence in, and bound to him by the highest obligations, upbraid him continually with his own baseness to his patron, and make him afraid to place trust in any other; so that he lives in a state of constant suspicion and dread of all mankind, destitute of that

friendly confidence which is the cement of society, the comfort and support of life.

Nor is this the only wound that rankles in his breast. The unhappy victim of his avarice, murdered under the formalities of law, is never absent from his thoughts a moment. Conjured up by conscience, his spectre haunts his dreams. He sees him in the dark. He hears him in the deepest silence. Nor can the loud laugh of mirth and riot drown his louder voice in the midst of company. Hence that gloom which you see hang upon his brow; that consciousness of guilt, which gives a cast of horror to his very smiles. Consider now, the story of this man; and own with reverence and awe, that vice never wants an avenger; that wickedness is its own punishment. Who would not rather be the apparent wretch, that wanders homeless through the world, fed by the cold hand of common charity, than he, with all his honours, power, and wealth! The characters of the rest, except him who had been my master's competitor for admission into the superior order of the society, are not distinguished by any thing to make them worth displaying! I shall, therefore, leave them in the obscurity they deserve; as I shall reserve his for another place, where some new occurrences will show it in a stronger light.

CHAP. XXXI.

Chrysal leaves the convent. His master proceeds in character. He practises a new manner of courtship; and signalises his talents for intrigue, by debauching the daughter of his friend. Her distress, when too late, gives him some slight qualms of conscience; but he soon recovers, and goes on in his enterprise.

IT was my fortune to leave this place, in the possession of the same person who had brought me to it. The moment the meeting broke up, he flew to reduce into practice some part of the theory which had been so well discussed among them. A person of distinguished learning and virtue, who had taken great pains, though to little purpose, with some part of the education of his youth, had observed of late, that he seemed to pay him particu-
lar

lar respect, and was more frequent than usual in his visits at his house, where he behaved with a moral decency, very different from his general character. The good man saw this with real pleasure, and attributing it to the influence of his own conversation, as vanity will find its way into the best hearts, gave him all the encouragement he could to come, in hopes of working a thorough reformation in him. But he was deceived in that hope; and found, when too late, that he had cherished a viper in his bosom, to sting his heart. Eusebius (that was this person's name) had an only daughter, on whose education he had exerted the tenderest care. She was now in that dangerous time of life, when ripened youth has given all the passions their full force, and reason not yet acquired strength to rule them. This danger, though, seemed less threatening to her than it is to most of the sex, nature which had been most liberal to her mind, having denied those charms of face which too often prove a snare to the possessor; and the precepts of her father trained her in such principles of wisdom and virtue, as seemed a sufficient guard.

Such circumstances, exclusive of the obligations of honour not to infringe the laws of hospitality (I add not virtue, for that has long lost all obligation in matters of this kind) would have prevented any other man from thinking of attempting her; but the pleasure of seducing innocence supplied every defect of beauty; and the difficulty of such a conquest doubled his ardour in the pursuit; as the triumph would establish the fame of his gallantry, which had never yet aspired beyond a servant wench; beside, that the age and profession of her father secured him from the danger of personal resentment. Encouraged by all these equally powerful motives, the moment he saw her, he marked her out for the proof of his talents for intrigue; how to begin his attack though, so as to elude her father's vigilance, without alarming her virtue, was the question. But he was not long at a loss. Difficulties, which appear unsurmountable to wisdom, are easily conquered by cunning (and with this he was

VOL. III. K 3 plentifully

plentifully stored) because it will make use of means, which the other holds in abhorrence. In pursuance, therefore, of a plan which he soon formed, he cultivated the acquaintance of Eusebius with the greatest assiduity, and, in all his visits to his house, turned his conversation entirely upon points of speculative knowledge, in which he professed the most earnest desire of information. Eusebius took the bait. As these were the usual topics of discourse between him and his daughter, he was pleased at her being present whenever my master was with him, both for her information, and to give her an opportunity of displaying the advantages she had received from his care; for which purpose, he often led her and my master into arguments, to which he listened with the highest delight, as she always had the better in them. Nor was she less pleased on such occasions than her father. The modest deference which my master constantly paid to her judgment was so flattering to her consciousness of superiority, that she soon became fond of his company; at the same time, that the artfulness of his address to her, for he never showed any other notice of her sex, than by a most guarded delicacy in his expressions, deceived the watchful care of Eusebius so effectually, that he never scrupled to leave his two pupils (as he fondly affected to call them) alone together, when any business demanded his attendance elsewhere. As this was what my master had all along aimed at, it may be supposed he did not neglect to improve opportunities so favourable to his wishes. He always turned his conversation directly to such subjects as were most likely to inflame the passions, on the gratification of which he expatiated with a particular warmth and luxuriancy of imagination, but in terms so well wrapped up, as to conceal the poison they conveyed. The effect soon answered his design. Subjects, proposed merely as points of speculation, gave her no alarm. And when such thoughts are once suggested, nature will lead them to her own ends. Her passions had been smothered, not extinguished; and were the readier to take fire, for such restraint. She heard him, therefore, with pleasure, and slid insensibly into danger,

ger, the direct mention of which would have struck her with horror.

Matters were in this critical situation, when he returned from the society. The moment he alighted, he flew to the house of Eusebius, who unhappily was not at home. The conversation soon fell into its late course. There are some moments in which nature will bear down all opposition. Though she had indulged herself in talking on such subjects, she meant nothing more. But he was too well versed in the practice to let her stop at the theory; and one unguarded minute murdered the peace of her future life, and blasted the fruits of all her father's care. It is impossible to describe what she felt, when passion gave place to reason, and she became sensible of what had passed. Even he, hacknied as he was in the ways of wickedness, could not stand it. He left her precipitately, and for the first time felt something like remorse. But these qualms lasted not long. His desires were rather raised than satisfied; besides that, to have stopped here, without making his success public, would have disappointed perhaps the principal pleasure he had in view. He resolved, therefore, to seduce her from her father's house, that all the world might be witnesses of his triumph. For this purpose he went to her the next morning, at a time when he knew Eusebius was usually engaged abroad. On enquiring for her, he was answered that she was not well; and was turning about to go away, when her maid, who, from her own experience had suspected something of the cause of her mistress's illness, officiously ran to him, and told him she was in her dressing-room.

CHAP. XXXII.

Continued. Chrysal's master makes his triumph public, by seducing his new mistress away from her father's house. The manner in which he imposed upon them both to effect this; with the consolation he gave her for some natural consequences of his gallantry. His triumph is completed by her going upon the town, and her father's breaking his heart. Chrysal changes his service. HIS

HIS intimacy in the family giving him a title to visit her there, he went directly up, where he found her in a condition that once more shook his resolution, and made him almost sorry for what he had done. She sat the image of despair! sleep had never closed her eyes! she had not changed the disordered dress of the day before; and her face was so swollen with incessant weeping, that he could hardly believe it was she. Her maid withdrawing *conveniently*, as soon as he entered, he threw himself at her feet in all the trick of woe, and imploring her pardon, lamented what had passed (for which he imprecated heaven's vengeance on his own head) in such passionate terms, as, amid all her grief, alarmed her fear of his being overheard, for hitherto the secret was their own.

The first hint of this cured him of his penitence, and suggested to him how to proceed. He persisted in all the extravagance of grief; and acted his part so well, that, forgetting her own distress for a moment, she was insensibly led to administer consolation to him. This was what he wanted! he at length seemed to be comforted by her arguments, which he gradually improved so far as to glance at her continuance of the guilty commerce, which he pressed for by the most rapturous professions of love, and the strongest vows of constancy and truth.

This was an attack which she was no way prepared for: her heart was softened by grief; and shame for what was passed precluded her arguments against a repetition. She hesitated however, silenced, not convinced, till the voice of her father turned the scale. ‘O! save me from
‘his sight!’ exclaimed she, wringing her hands. ‘Save
‘me from his sight! I’ll go to death, to any thing rather
‘than meet his eye.’—‘Nor shall you meet it,’ answered my master, clasping her in his arms, and kissing away the tears that trickled down her cheek. ‘I’ll go
‘this instant; and take him home with me as upon business, where I’ll find means to detain him, while you
‘pack up some immediate necessaries, and prepare to meet
‘my *faithful valet-de-chambre*, who shall wait with a
‘coach

‘ coach at the end of the next street, and conduct you to
‘ my country-house, whither I’ll follow you on the wings
‘ of love, and drown every disagreeable thought in rap-
‘ ture.’ He did not give her time to answer, but rushing
out of the room, and meeting her *ready* maid at the door,
took his cue from her, who told him she had excused her
mistress’s absence from supper the night before, on a pre-
tence of her being engaged in reading, as she said in the
morning, that she had sat up too late, to rise to breakfast.

Satisfied with these excuses, because he suspected no-
thing else, Eusebius, on hearing my master was above,
was coming up to pay his compliments to him, when he
met him at the bottom of the stairs. ‘ I must give up
‘ arguing with one,’ said my master, smiling as he went
forward into the parlour, whither he knew Eusebius would
necessarily attend him, ‘ who sits up studying all night.
‘ She has turned me out on a pretence of dressing; but I
‘ know it is to go back to the book at which I caught
‘ her; so that I shall make but a poor figure in the even-
‘ ing if you don’t help me out. However, I’ll try: I
‘ am not ashamed to yield to her: But, come, I called
‘ so early to beg your company at my house, where I
‘ have something that will please you to consult you upon,
‘ I shan’t keep you long, as I am obliged to go out be-
‘ fore dinner.’

To this Eusebius readily assented; and my master,
putting his hand under his arm, led him away, proud of
such familiarity with a person of his rank, as unsuspect-
ing as a victim to the altar. As soon as he got home,
he gave the necessary instructions to his *trusty* valet-de-
chambre, and then returning to Eusebius, amused him
with imaginary schemes of reformation and œconomy in
his family, and improvements in his house, till the re-
turn of his emissary let him know all was over. He then
dismissed Eusebius with a smile of triumph, who went
home, happy in his mind at the prudence and virtue of
his conversation, the effects, as he fondly imagined, of
his own care and example; the last time his mind ever
knew happiness. The moment he was gone, my master
hasted

hasted after the deluded fugitive, whom he overtook just as she alighted at his house, the servants of which were too well accustomed to such things, to be surprised at the sight of a new face. The manner of their meeting may be easily conceived. On his side, all was joy and triumph; on her's, guilty confusion, shame, and fear. However, repetition, though the highest aggravation of a crime, is yet less terrifying than the first commission.

Three days he staid with her, every moment of which was embittered to her by reflection, and seemed tedious to him from satiety and impatience to make his triumph known; and then left her on pretence of business, with vows of immediate return, and, going back to London, repaired directly to the tavern, where he had by letter appointed to meet all his associates, to whom he related the whole affair in such terms of exultation, as raised their envy, not so much at the possession of her, as the glory of such a triumph.

I see your anxiety to know the fate of the unhappy Eusebius, and his more unhappy daughter. Though I saw them no more myself, I had too many opportunities of hearing their story, the sum of which is this:—Eusebius, on his return home from my master, found a note from his daughter, bidding him farewell for ever, and desiring he would not take the trouble of making any inquiry after her, as she was unworthy of his care. The distraction evident in the style and purport of this note too plainly showed her ruin. This was an attack his heart was not proof against. He sunk down instantly in a swoon, in which he escaped some hours of misery before he recovered his senses. The first exertion of his reason was to make inquiry after his daughter, but no one could give him any information, her maid who conducted her having accompanied her flight. He then flew to his friend, my master, for council and assistance; for the goodness of his own heart would neither let him suspect him, nor desert her in the ruin into which she had fallen; but he was told at his house, that a nobleman of his acquaintance had called upon him, the moment he left him, and
taken

taken him into the country for a few days. Every inquiry he could make after his daughter was equally unsuccessful, till my master's exultation made the whole affair public. This, if possible, gave fresh poignancy to his grief. He did not, however, desert the wretched victim of such villany, but wrote to her directly to return to him, and hide her shame from the world in his bosom ; but despair made her reject his offer.

As for her, a few days, in which my master left her to the comfort of her own reflections, discovered to her that his love had been injurious to her health, as well as to her peace of mind. What she felt at this discovery may be easily conceived. She wrote to him in the agony of her soul, to reproach such manifold baseness ; but, instead of an answer of excuse or consolation, received only a quack doctor's advertisement, and a bank-note for a trifling sum, enclosed in a blank cover. The same post brought her father's offer of forgiveness and reception.—The contrast was more than she could bear. She hurried back to town, where despair prompting her to revenge her folly on herself by still deeper ruin, she plunged into all the horrors of a life of common prostitution.

This filled the measure of her father's woe. He had no redress to expect in this world ; and, therefore, resigning the punishment of his wrongs to the great avenger, indulged his grief in silence, till in a few months it brought his grey hairs to the grave.

I here quitted his service, and after an extensive circulation, became the property of a pawn-broker, from whence I got into the possession of a beau.

CHAP. XXXIII.

History of a Beau, with a journal of his manner of life for one day. Chrysal changes his service, in a common way, for that of a lady of fashion.

I was now become the property of a beau, who was one of those cyphers in nature, who seemed born only to make up the number of mankind. The poor pittance, which pride of family spares from the eldest son to save the rest from starving, had been just enough to purchase him

him a commission in the guards, in which he signalized his prowess on the parade, and talked as big, and looked as bluff as the best, while his campaigns were confined to St. James's Park, but the prospect of a war changed his note. The irregularities and licentiousness of a military life now shocked his delicacy, and he exchanged for half-pay; and, retaining only the convenient title of captain, resolved to push his fortune in the gentler way of matrimony. For this purpose, he directly commenced beau, as the fair sex is soonest caught by the eye, and, when that is pleased, seldom inquire farther. Accordingly, he now studied nothing but fashions, as all his care was to procure cloathes to keep up to them, which the narrowness of his circumstances made so difficult for him to do, that his belly mourned many a time for the finery of his back. Nor was that his only difficulty. The very expence of going into company to display that finery was often as distressing to him as to procure it.

It was on an occasion of this kind, that I came into his possession. His showy appearance, together with his being one whom every body knew, making him a convenient faggot to fill up those musters, the only end of which is to show the consequence of the *commanding officer*, by the numbers she can crowd together, there was hardly a genteel rout in town to which he was not invited. Such a distinction was the height of his ambition; accordingly, having received a card to summon him to one the next evening, he was not able to resist the temptation of so favourable an opportunity of showing himself to the ladies, though his finances were so low, that he had no other way to defray the expence of his chair, but by applying to a pawnbroker, where distress is preyed upon by profession, and really aggravated under the deceitful appearance of momentary relief—an expedient, indeed, to which he was well accustomed. As soon as it was dark, therefore, he came wrapped up in a horseman's coat, and pulling a laced waistcoat out of his bosom, mortgaged it for three guineas, one of which I was. When this weighty transaction was concluded, he returned home, and,

and, changing his dress, repaired to a coffee-house at the court end of the town, where he talked over the news of the day, with all the significant airs and importance of one in the secret, confirming every word he said with the authority of his cousin, this lord, or his friend, that duke, till he carelessly out-stayed all his engagements for supper, when a welch-rabbit and three-penny-worth of punch made him amends for the want of a dinner, and he went home satisfied. Well as I was by this time acquainted with the inconsistencies of human life, I could not help being struck with the contradiction between the external appearance and domestic oeconomy of my new master. The former was in all the elegance of taste and affluence, while the latter was regulated by the strictest parsimony that nature could support. He lodged in a house, which opened into a genteel street, and had a back door into a blind alley, that served him whenever he chose to go out or come in *incog*. Here, one room up three-pair of stairs (but the name of the street over-balanced that, and every other inconvenience) served him for every purpose of life, in most of which he ministered to himself, undisturbed by the company of any one, but his hair-dresser, laundress, and tailor, at their appointed times. To all others he was constantly denied by the people of the house, who received all messages for him, and returned proper answers. But the manner of his life will be best described by the history of the one day I was in his possession, the business of every day being invariably the same.

As he had sat up late, it was near noon when he arose, by which genteel indulgence he saved coals, for his fire was never lighted till after he was up. He then sallied out to breakfast in a tarnished laced frock, and his thick-soled shoes, read the papers in the coffee-house (too soon after breakfast to take any thing) and then walked a turn in the Park, till it was time to dress for dinner, when he went home, and finding his stomach out of order from his last night's debauch, and his late breakfasting, he sent the maid of the house for a bason of pea-soup from the cook's shop to settle it, by the time he had taken which, it was

too late for him to think of going any where to dine, though he had several appointments with people of the first fashion. When this frugal meal was over, he set about the real business of the day. He took out and brushed his best cloaths, set his shirt to the fire to air, put on his stockings and shoes, and then sitting down to his toilet, on which his washes, paints, tooth-powders, and lip salves were all placed in order, had just finished his face, when his hair-dresser came, one hour under whose hands completed him a first rate beau.

When he had contemplated himself for some time with pride of heart, and practised his looks and gestures at the glass, a chair was called, which carried him to a scene of equal magnificence and confusion. From the brilliant appearance of the company, and the ease, and self complacency in all their looks, it should have seemed that there was not one poor or unhappy person among them. But the case of my master had convinced me what little faith is to be given to appearances, as I also found, upon a nearer view, that many of the gayest there were in no better a condition than he. Having reconnoitred one another sufficiently to lay in a fund for remarks, and banded about the common cant of compliments, the company sat down to cards, when the looks of many of them soon underwent a change. For *prudential reasons* my master always declined engaging in parties of this nature, but this night all his addresses could not excuse him. A lady, *whom he had dressed at* for a considerable time, happening to come late, unluckily *wanted one*, and seeing him idle would take no apology. He complied, therefore, with the best grace he could, and invoking fortune with more fervency than he had ever prayed to heaven, *cut in*; when chancing *to fall against her*, her superior luck, or skill, aided not a little by his anxiety, soon stripped him of every shilling in his pocket, and sent him home in a pensive mood, to study *ways and means* for raising another supply; and on this occasion I followed the smiles of fortune, and entered into the service of the winner.



Drawn by E.F. Burney.

Engraved for C. Cooke Aug^r 10. 1787.

Engraved by C. Warren.

*Story of Chrysal's new mistress. She is brought into
s by her beauty, from which a lucky interview re-
ber. The danger of arguing in favour of inclina-
gainst reason. Her friend puts her to school, to learn
ers, and afterwards marries her. His family show
ent resentment, at which he is so enraged, that he
his will, by which he leaves her his whole fortune;
hen dies. An uncommon instance of the good-nature of
world.*

THOUGH my late master had put the best face he
could upon the matter, and excused his breaking
the party at the end of the first *rubber*, on a pretence
being taken suddenly sick, my mistress saw through
it. ‘Sick indeed!’ said she, laughing, ‘ha! ha! ha!
or captain! I do not doubt but you are, and that at
heart! I saw it coming upon you, ever since the first
deal, when *I held four by honours!* but I don’t wonder
at it. A full rubber was too much. Two guineas and
a half are no trifle to some people!’—

Two or three other visits which she had to pay that
evening prevented her making a new party, she only
stayed to tell the story of the captain’s sickness to every
one she knew in the room, who all joined in the laugh
against him. I see you are shocked at such an instance of
insensibility; but, if you will reflect a moment, you will
find you have no reason. Though poverty is attended
with many real evils, yet, when the worst of them are
voluntarily encountered to gratify vanity, the pity, other-
wise due to it, is justly turned into contempt; and the
efforts used to hide it, which are always seen through,
treated with ridicule and insult.

The morning after I came into the possession of my
new mistress, she brought to conclusion an affair of a most
extraordinary nature, which few women beside herself
would have had spirit even to undertake. To explain it
properly to you, it will be necessary to give you a short
sketch of her story. The gifts of nature are either a bes-
sing, or a curse, according to the use made of them. My

mistress was born in one of the lowest classes of mankind ; the obscurity of her birth, though, seemed to be made amends for, by the endowments of her person and mind, which were such as raised universal admiration, from their first infant dawn. But these, tempting the licentious spoiler, like the beauty of a flower growing in the high-way, lost their advantage, and proved her ruin for want of proper care. She had scarce passed her childhood, when one of those female purveyors for vice, who go about, like their master, seeking whom they may destroy, to the disgrace not only of their own sex, but also of human nature, marked her out as proper for her purpose. There was no difficulty, either in getting her into her power, or seducing her mind. The poverty of her parents made them glad to part with her, without further inquiry, to any one who promised to take care of her, only to be delivered from the expence of her support, as it had prevented their giving her the least education to form her manners, or inspire her mind with principles of virtue. Such a subject was exactly suited for so vile an agent to work upon. She took her home ; dressed her up decently, and, teaching her what account to give of herself, prostituted her, while she could make any profit of her, and then turned her adrift upon the world, to live as well as she could on the earnings of sin and wretchedness.

I must not attempt to describe the life of a common prostitute ! it is too horrible ! She had run through the lowest scenes of it for some time, when fortune one night threw into her way one of those old debilitated debauchees, who indulge in the speculation after they are past the practice of vice. Something in her air and manner, as she *picked him up*, struck him. He took her to a tavern, where he was still more pleased with her uncommon smartness and vivacity. ‘ I am cloyed,’ said he, to himself, ‘ with the gross ignorance of the women of the town ! ‘ I hate the impertinent airs of virtue, which those of ‘ better education give themselves ! I’ll therefore unite ‘ those qualifications, which separately please me in both, ‘ in

‘ in this young creature, who can never offend me by
 ‘ pretences to virtue, at the same time that the excellence
 ‘ of her understanding will receive, and reward me with
 ‘ the fruits of the best education.’—

There was novelty in the whim; and, therefore, he resolved to carry it into execution. He took her home with him, and, sending for the most eminent masters in every part of polite education, put her under their care, and incited their application by most liberal promises of reward. Young as she was, and hackneyed in every vicious habit, she had a sufficient sense of the change in her way of life, not to forfeit the advantage by any misbehaviour or neglect. On the contrary, she applied herself so closely to every thing taught her, and showed a disposition so desirous of improvement in every sense, that her benefactor, proud of the discernment which could discover such talents under so great disadvantages, became enamoured of the effects of his own benevolence and care.

‘ I have at length found,’ would he say to himself, ‘ what
 ‘ I have hitherto sought in vain—a woman that can make
 ‘ me happy! Her wit and understanding will enliven the
 ‘ hour of heaviness; while a false parade of virtue will
 ‘ never throw a damp on pleasantries and mirth. What,
 ‘ though her birth is obscure! are we not all descended
 ‘ from one common stock? is the blood of a peasant less
 ‘ pure than that of a prince?—If she has taken a false
 ‘ step, in the weakness of her youth, that should be charged
 ‘ to fate, that led her into temptation before she had rea-
 ‘ son to resist it!—But all these seeming disadvantages
 ‘ are now turned in her favour. Her experience in the
 ‘ ways of the world will make it impossible to deceive
 ‘ her again. Her consciousness of the meanness of her
 ‘ own family will give her a proper sense of the honour
 ‘ of being admitted into mine, and save me from the in-
 ‘ tolerable plague of having her pedigree rung in my
 ‘ ears every hour. Her youth and luxuriance of constitu-
 ‘ tion will also supply to our children the defects which
 ‘ too eager a pursuit of pleasure may have made in mine.
 ‘ Let those who are dependent on the world regard its

‘censure; I am above it, and will pursue my own happiness, wherever it leads me.’

There is nothing more dangerous than seeking for arguments in favour of inclination against reason. Trifles, light as air, will be admitted as the weightiest proofs of that which is wished to be proved; and palliatives, barely possible, answer objections, in their nature unanswerable. He had taken a liking to her! he had taken it into his head to secure the gratification of that liking, by marrying her; and a very little arguing with himself in this manner soon convinced him, not only of the expediency of such a marriage to his happiness; but also of the obligation he was under of doing that justice to her merit, and his own judgment. The consequence may be easily concluded. He married her, as he professed, in obedience to reason, rather than to gratify inclination. But the case was very different with the world, which, far from seeing the force of his arguments, laughed at him for being taken thus in a snare of his own making. His own family, in particular, beheld her with eyes, perhaps, not less blinded by interest, than his were by inclination; and, depreciating the merit she really had, represented his marriage as the mere effect of vicious dotage.

Nothing is so ill judged as to show impotent resentment. It only provokes a return of no effect; and makes a wound incurable, which otherwise might have healed of itself. Incensed that they should presume to censure actions which they could not control, he directly made his will, by which he gave away the inheritance of his ancestors from his own blood, leaving his whole fortune to his wife, as a testimony of his unaltered regard for her, and to show his resentment to them; soon after which he died. This was more than her most sanguine hopes could ever have risen to. She was in the prime of life; and possessed of a fortune to afford her all its pleasures. These advantages (and I should add her beauty, which was in the perfection of a ripened bloom) naturally attracted a number of admirers of different kinds, and with as different views, who all thought themselves sure

sure of her, from the circumstances of her past life. Needy adventurers (such as my late master) paid court to her fortune, in the matrimonial way ; while her beauty attracted the more dangerous address of those, who meant no more than pleasure. But she was guarded against both. She had tasted something of the sweets of virtuous reputation, and knew the value of it too well to forfeit it entirely again by compliance with the latter ; and her pride and experience set her above all the schemes of the former. She lived thus for some time in the highest happiness of which she had any idea, for she was a stranger to that false delicacy, which creates itself imaginary uneasinesses, and palls the enjoyment of present pleasures. She was admitted into good company, where her behaviour, if not absolutely approved of, was still received with good-natured allowances, as much better than might have been expected from the circumstances of her life ; and she herself treated with tenderneſs, to encourage her to perseverance in so uncommon an amendment. But this happiness was too great to last long undisturbed.

CHAP. XXXV.

The common consequence of over-doing things. Her husband's relations find out a flaw in his will. The comfort of having good lawyers to keep up a client's spirits. For the advantage of having two strings to her bow, she enters into an agreement of marriage, under a heavy penalty. The event of her law-suit shows the prudence of this precaution. She is cast ; her lover flies off, and she sues him for the penalty of his engagement. He begs the money among his friends, and then by a nice finesse plays her own game back upon her, and flings her off with half.—Chrysal changes his service.

IT daily happens that men defeat their own intentions, by carrying them too far. Hurried away by his passions, her husband, in making his will, had exceeded the power vested in him by the law, and so, by striving to give her more than he had a right, really gave her much less. But it was a considerable time before his family recovered sufficiently from the astonishment and confusion with

with which such a stroke overwhelmed them, to perceive this, and be able to pursue proper measures for taking advantage of it. The first notice my mistress received of this affair, was by an offer they made her, to refer their claim to private decision, in order to avoid the expence and trouble of a law-suit. But, though the former part of her life had impressed her with horror at the very name of the law, she would not listen to such a proposal, without taking *proper* advice, the result of which may be easily judged.

Lawyers will never loose a good client for want of giving hopes. Her's persuaded her so fully of the justice of her cause, and gave her such positive assurance of success, that she resolved to spare no expence to obtain it.— Though *right* and *wrong* are so essentially different from each other, they yet are sometimes involved in such intricacies, by the industry of those whose profession it is to distinguish between them, that it is difficult to know which is which. It was so in this case. They had raised such clouds, that reason could not see through them; and so every one was left to speak according to inclination. While matters were in this situation, one of her admirers thought it a proper time to push his fortune with her. His rank and expectations in life raised him above the necessity of such a scheme; but avarice will stoop to any thing; and he would gladly have taken her, with all her faults, for the sake of her fortune, the certainty of her establishing her right to which he had taken care to be well assured of by sages learned in the law, before he laid siege to her. This, however, he was far from avowing. He pleaded the most disinterested love, and pressed for a return with all the ardency of desire.

But, though she could not do so much injustice to her charms, as to doubt their power of inspiring such a passion, she positively refused to listen to any proposals of marriage till her law-suit should be decided, *from a generous fear of involving him in inconveniences*, which her lawyers positively assured her could never happen; as he, *with equal generosity*, founded on the like assurances, offered

offered to marry her while it was depending; whereas, the truth of the matter was with both, that *he thought he could make a better bargain, as she knew she must a worse*, if it should be concluded, till every thing was absolutely settled.

They had played this game upon each other for some time, when a diffident word dropped by one of her lawyers, as the day of decision drew near, determined her to change her system, and make sure of something for fear of the worst. Accordingly, the next time her lover visited her, on his repeating his professions of the violence of his passion, and offering, as a proof of its disinterestedness, to enter into a mutual engagement of marriage, as soon as the suit should be ended one way or other, under the penalty of a large sum of money on the refuser, she let herself be overcome by such an instance of sincerity, and, taking him at his word, signed the engagement directly. The event justified this caution; for, after all the assurances of success by which she had been led on by her lawyers to run into every expence they could devise, justice appeared so strongly in favour of her opponents, that she *was cast*; and a considerable part of the estate of her husband adjudged to return directly to his family; and the rest after her death.

Though what remained to her was more than sufficient to support her in the genteelest manner, she could not but feel at first a fall from such high hopes; but her spirit had been too well exercised in the beginning of her life, to yield long to any thing; and she had almost got the better of it, when something that piqued her resentment roused her effectually. Among all the *friends* who came on this occasion *to gratify the insolence of condoling her misfortune*, she was not a little surprised never to see the face of her lover. As she could not be at a loss for the mean motive of such behaviour, she might possibly have treated it with the contempt it deserved, had not necessity urged her to show a warmer resentment.

The expences of her law-suit had involved her in debts (for she never lowered her living, depending on the assurances

urances given her of success) which were now demanded with an importunity that perplexed her. This was just at the time when she took notice of the desertion of her lover. The urgency of her creditors, therefore, suggested it to her, to call upon him to fulfil his engagement of marriage, which his conduct convinced her he would forfeit the penalty rather than do, by which means she should punish him for his rashness, and extricate herself from her difficulties at the same time; for, had she thought that he would fulfil it, there was nothing she would not have suffered, sooner than link her fate to him.

There was something in a woman's calling upon a man to marry her so contrary to those notions of delicacy, on which the superior class of the female sex value themselves, that, perhaps, no other woman of her rank could have prevailed upon herself to do it. But she had not been born in, nor bred up with expectations of that rank; her notions, therefore, were of a coarser complexion; and, though she had learned the external modes of behaviour, *the trick of complaisance*, she had been put to school too late in life, to change her sentiments so far as to make her think it necessary to sacrifice such powerful motives as resentment and interest to a delicacy that appeared to her merely fantastic. The moment, therefore, the thought occurred, she applied once more to her lawyer; and by his advice wrote a letter to her lover, in which she directly claimed the performance of his engagement. But, as this was no more than his heart told him he must expect (for he would have done the very same thing himself) he was prepared how to answer her. Accordingly, he wrote to her in the most artful manner, accusing him of his not having been to wait upon her since the fatal decision of her law-suit, on account of the pain he must feel at seeing her, when he had lost all hopes of ever calling her his; for, as her generosity would not permit her to marry while there was only a possibility of such a misfortune, he could not suppose that her sense of honour and justice would now, when it had actually happened; and for this reason he desired that she would please to send him his engagement, not
that

that it was of any consequence, as he would return her's, to whom he wished the highest happiness in every scene and view of life. Such a refusal was just what she wanted: she, therefore, instantly commenced a suit at law with him, to recover the penalty of his engagement, which he had thus forfeited to her.

The care he had taken himself, to make the engagement as binding as possible, precluding every hope of defeating her claim; and his knowledge of her temper convincing him that it would be in vain to attempt prevailing on her to drop it now she had once begun, he had recourse to an expedient to extricate him from this difficulty, of the same mean kind with that which brought it upon him. Accordingly, though he was well enough able to pay the penalty himself, as he did not choose to fulfil his engagement by marrying, he put on a poor face, and went begging to all his relations for their assistance, pleading poverty, and alledging the disgrace it would bring upon the whole family if he should be obliged to marry such a woman, whom he represented in the blackest colours, exaggerating every circumstance of her life. Though this might justly have been retorted upon himself, for ever thinking of her, they took pity on his distress, and raised the money for him, by a general contribution.

Such success encouraged him to hope for further, and try the force of his eloquence upon my mistress. For this purpose, he desired an interview, which she had with much reluctance consented to give him, the next morning after I came into her possession. I had seen vice and folly in a variety of shapes, but never did the human heart appear to me in so contemptible a light, as his upon this occasion. He began his attack with flattery, professing the highest respect, and lamenting, in the most passionate terms, that the difficulty of his circumstances would not permit him to have the happiness of marrying her, and appealed to her generosity and justice, as before, for a release from an engagement, that it must be the ruin of them both to fulfil. But all was in vain. She scarce deigned to make him any answer; and that only to tell him,

him, that his professions and arguments were equally ineffectual to alter a resolution, which the baseness of his behaviour alone had made her take. Not quite discouraged, though, by such a repulse, he instantly changed his method of application. He threw himself at her feet, implored her compassion on his poverty, and offered, as the utmost it would admit him to do, to pay her down half the penalty directly, concluding with saying, that, if she refused to accept of that, he had no other resource, but even to fulfil his engagement and marry her.

This was fighting the devil at his own weapons. The mention of marriage was a stroke she was not prepared for. Startled at the thought, therefore, as she knew not what despair might drive him to, she agreed to his proposal, and so they divided the money between them (for he prudently pocketed the other half himself, as he could not think of offering such an affront to his friends as to return any part of their bounty) and were equal gainers by a bargain, in which each out-witted the other.

Though what my mistress got fell short of her expectation, it answered the double end of gratifying her resentment, and paying her debts, on the latter of which occasions I left her service.

CHAP. XXXVI.

Chrysal makes some out-of-the-way remarks on matrimony. Description and history of his new master. Chrysal vindicates his using a common expression. His master's first rise from a beggar to a foot-boy. He gains his master's favour, of which he makes the use natural to be expected from his first education. Some account of a relation of his principal's. The danger of giving advice. Chrysal's master insinuates himself into the colonel's liking, and undermines his principal in his regard.

I Have observed, in the course of this account of my last mistress that you have been shocked at the thought of a man's marrying a woman in her circumstances. To you, who view life only by the light of reason, it must certainly appear most unaccountable; but better acquaintance with the ways of the world would reconcile you to that, and
many

many other things equally gross and shocking in speculation. Marriage is a mutual trust of honour. A man's marrying a woman, therefore, who has lost her honour, is trusting his whole fortune to a bankrupt, who has no security to give for that trust; a fool-hardiness that must proceed either from a consciousness of having himself no honour to lose, a total disregard to the loss, or an affectation of acting on different principles from the rest of mankind, [as a proof of being above their prejudices. Where her honour indeed has been lost to himself, justice makes it a duty upon him to repair her loss by marriage; but then that very marriage is a punishment for his crime, as it must want the essential happiness of confidence; for he will be always ready to suspect, that the disposition which betrayed her into error with him may have the same effect with others. Nor is this suspicion unnatural. I see you would argue from the habitual, avowed incontinence of man, that this trust of honour is not equal, and therefore cannot be obliging. But this is judging without duly considering the subject. Chastity is, in its nature, a virtue equally the duty of both sexes to observe, and, with regard to society in general, the violation of it is equally criminal in both; but, in those nearer connections of life, the interest of which is the more immediate object of human attention, the consequences of that violation in woman are attended with so much greater inconveniences than in man, that, in respect to them, the crime is obviously less pardonable in her than in him; and, for this reason, this virtue of chastity is made, in a peculiar manner, the honour of woman; while the honour of man is placed in other virtues, from which she receives as much advantage, as he does from her chastity; and, therefore, the trust of honour is mutual and equal.—In distinguishing thus between honour and virtue, I speak according to the notions of mankind; in their own nature, there is no distinction between them.

There was something in the whole appearance of the person to whom my mistress paid me away, that made me expect to see a character of a cast which I had not yet

met with among mankind. His looks were sly, methodical, and plodding. Practice had fixed upon his passive face the hollow varnish of a servile smile; and an over-acted affectation of polite behaviour made his natural awkwardness truly ridiculous. But under all this, I could see a depth of design, and latitude of principle, equal to any great attempt, the success of which should in the opinion of the world determine the quality of that greatness, whether villainy or virtue. That knowledge of his life which is necessary to explain his character, and account for the principles upon which he acted consistently his manifold part, will be comprised in a few words. Sprung from the dregs of the people, and turned loose upon the world to shift for himself, as soon as he was able to crawl, he took his stand about the house of a person in business, where he hardly earned a morsel of broken victuals, by running of errands, cleaning shoes, and such offices as are performed by those servants of servants.

I see you wonder at my saying he was sprung from the dregs of the people, as if difference of rank could make any alteration in the essential equality of human nature; but without entering into a discussion of undetermined points, on both sides of which much has been said with equal strength of reason, the best observation of the power of early example, to impress those principles which are to govern the future life, will sufficiently justify my using the expression here. The patience with which he was obliged to bear the cuffs and kicks of those worst of tyrants, who always wantonly revenge tenfold upon their wretched underlings whatever they suffer themselves, taught him that hypocrisy, and abject submission to every thing that might any way serve his convenience, which afterwards proved the ground work of his fortune; as the example of his parents, who got their living by retailing to the poor the meanest necessities of life, initiated him so early into every species of low fraud and chicane, that they became absolutely natural to him, and invariably ruled the conduct of his life.

He had been some time in this hopeful course of education,

tion, when an accident opened him an opportunity of showing what a progress he had made in it. A brother of the person, about whose house he picked up the scraps that kept him alive, happening to see one of the servants beating him unmercifully, interfered from mere humanity, and saved him. The marks he bore of his beating raised a curiosity to know how he had deserved it; when he gave so seemingly innocent and pitiable an account of himself, and attributed the servant's cruelty so artfully to his having refused to do something for him, which was improper for him to do, that the young gentleman believed him, and taking compassion on his distress, admitted him into the family, to wait upon himself, by which he was delivered from his dependance on the other servants, and protected from their future insults. The humility with which he behaved himself, in this first step of his advancement, his assiduity and seeming attachment to his master soon won his good opinion so far, that he dispensed with his attendance, and sent him to school, where he applied himself so closely, and made such a proficiency, that his master took him into his own business, in which his sobriety, diligence, and obedient temper gained his confidence so entirely, that, as soon as ever he thought him capable, he admitted him into fellowship with himself, and absolutely resigned the management of his whole business to him. It may naturally be supposed, that he did not neglect to improve such an opportunity of practising the lessons he had learned in his youth. He secreted the profits of all the business, which his principal was not indispensibly obliged to be personally engaged in; he supplanted him with such as he could of his customers; he cheated of considerable sums of money such others, as long experience of his (the principal's) honesty had put off their guard with him; and took every occasion of insinuating to the world, under the most effectual disguise of friendly concern and complaint, his negligence and incapacity; at the same time, that he professed to himself the most implicit respect and obedience, and seemed ambitious of showing his gratitude and attachment, by performing

the same servile offices which had been his first occupation about him.

But all this was trifling in comparison with the stroke he made against him, in his own family. There was a near relation of his principal's, who was indebted to his friendly assistance for the first step of his rise to *the rank of colonel in the army*. Nature had been lavish to him in the endowments of mind and body; but pride marred the blessing, and turned them all to his disadvantage. Confidence in the external graces of his person made him neglect the improvement of his understanding, while an affection of singularity, which is always assumed as a mask to hide real ignorance, made him set his own opinion in opposition to the established judgment of mankind. As the conduct of such a man must necessarily be irregular, his relation and friend, my master's principal, exerted the authority of those characters, and frequently reproved him in the sincerity and well-meaning of his heart. The notion that this liberty, which when properly taken is the highest proof of regard, was assumed on the score of obligation, gave offence to the captious haughtiness of the colonel's temper, and estranged an esteem, which it ought to have confirmed.

This was an opportunity for my master to display his talents. He studied the temper of the colonel, and paid court to his caprices. He cringed to his haughtiness, bore his insults, and ministered to his vices, with an implicit submission to his superior sense and judgment, which he received as the only standard of right and wrong.

The contrast between his complaisance, and the superiority which the colonel thought his relation assumed by giving him advice, insensibly transferred to my master that regard which his principal lost. As this was what he had all along aimed at, he omitted nothing to widen the breach, by insinuations so artfully conveyed as to aggravate the offence taken by the colonel, and yet if repeated would bear a sense directly opposite, and seem to spring entirely from friendly concern, should a reconciliation between them bring his practices to light. But an event
that

that he could not scheme for, removed every such apprehension, and rivited his influence beyond his most sanguine hopes.

CHAP. XXXVII.

Further accounts of the Colonel. Chrysal's master, in conjunction with the family associate proper for the purpose, completes his scheme of alienating the colonel's regard from his family, of which he gives a proof of a most extraordinary nature. A remarkable instance of Chrysal's master's talents for a particular kind of wit, with a striking account of the worthy manner in which he and his family associate acquitted themselves of the trust reposed in them by the colonel.

VAIN of the beauty of his person, the colonel prided himself in an opinion, that there was no woman whose virtue could resist his addresses. This self-conceit, which the frailty of the lower class of females had first given rise to, was confirmed by his success with one, whose fortune and education should have secured her against his attacks. The glory of such a conquest satisfied his vanity; and the pleasure of having her on his own terms so endeared her to him, that he thought not of any other. One thing only gave him concern about her; which was, in whose care he should leave her, when the business of the campaign called him into the field. But in this he was not long at a loss. The humble, implicit attachment of my master, pointed him out as the person, in every respect, most proper for such a trust. To him, therefore, he committed her at his departure, hugging himself in the happiness of having such a mistress, and such a friend.

The nature of this trust necessarily brought on an intimacy between my master and his charge. Intimacies between the sexes are dangerous in any circumstances: but in their's, where she could not even make pretence to that virtue which could be her only guard, the consequence is obvious. From this time, they joined their interests, and laid their heads together to estrange him from his own family, particularly my master's principal, who,

in case of death, had the first claim, from law and nature, to his fortune. In carrying on this scheme, they played into each others hands with such address at his return, that, when he was going to the next *campaign*, he made a will, by which he gave, not only his own large acquisitions, but also the inheritance of his ancestors, between them, in such a manner as plainly showed a wrong mind, and supported his bequest with such reasons, as were an insult to the laws and religion of his country; at the same time, that they perpetuated the infamy of those, to whom it was made, by arguing expressly in favour of the vices which had gained them this mark of his regard; and this will, the substance of which satisfied them for the circumstances, he left in the hands of my master.

In this situation matters stood between the three, when I came into his possession. When he had finished the drudgery of the day, he went as usually to spend his evening agreeably with his charge. There was one species of what is called *wit*, upon his expertness in which my master valued himself not a little. This was telling a fictitious story with so grave a face, and corroborating it with such plausible circumstances as to raise the hearer's anxiety, and then to laugh at the easy faith that could be so *taken in*. Low as the merit of such wit was, at the best, in him it had none at all. His fictions were no better than down right lies, destitute of imagination or humour, and corroborated with nothing but *new-coined oaths*, and *imprecations*, fit to afford entertainment only to the damned. With an essay of this kind he resolved to entertain his mistress this evening. Exerting, therefore, all his command of countenance, 'my dearest love,' said he, with a melancholy look, and deep-drawn sigh, as he entered the room, 'I have received bad news, *blast my eyes!* there has been a battle, in which our fool'——'Has not been killed!' interrupted she, snatching the word out of his mouth, 'that is bad news, indeed; but another battle may afford better.'——

I see you were struck with horror at my repeating the *imprecation* he made use of on this occasion. Instead, therefore,

therefore, of intermixing them with every period of his discourse, as he always does, I will in their place make a pause thus, ———, which will serve as well, for he uses them, in general, as no more than mere expletives.

‘No!’ answered he, shrugging up his shoulders, ‘that chance is lost for ever ———. He has received a wound ———, which, without endangering his life, has disabled him from further service, so that we shall be blest with his company ———, for the rest of our lives.’—‘Curse, you should say! but is there no way to be thought of to prevent it? Could not proper application be made to the surgeons?’—‘All is too late! his leg was taken off directly ———; and the danger entirely over, when the account came away; as you may see by his letter, in which he writes me word, ——— that he hopes to be at home with us, in a month, to leave us no more. Eh! what have I done with his letter? It should be in this pocket! I certainly have left it behind me in my confusion. But you will see it soon enough. He sends his love to you; and bids me tell you, he would have wrote to you, but was prevented by company, so that you see he cannot be in any danger ———. But he’ll make you amends. I see how every thing will be ———. He’ll marry you, as soon as he returns ———; that he may introduce you into his family, who will treat you with forced civility, in order to get him into their hands again. I see very well ———, how every thing will happen.’—‘No! that shall never happen! I hate them, and despise their civility. I had rather bear the sneers and insults of the world than that. Nor will I marry him, let what will be my fate! his insolent, capricious humour is scarce to be borne now; though he curbs it, because I am at liberty to leave him. What would it then be, were I to be his slave for life? I had rather feign penitence, and throw myself on the compassion of my own family, than plunge into such misery. Marriage on any terms is a state I despise, but with him I abjure it.’

This passion was such a triumph to my master, that he

he could keep his countenance no longer. ‘Ha! ha! ha! a fair *humbug*, damn me!’ said he, bursting out into a horse-laugh, ‘your humble servant, madam! I thought you could not be *taken in*. Ha! ha! ha! a fair *humbug*, damn me.’—‘Taken in!’ said she, vexed at being played upon, but more pleased that it was no worse, ‘how can you take delight in such a low-lived trick? If I could not show my wit in a better manner, I am sure I would give up all pretensions to it.’—‘All poor spite and malice! But don’t fret for it. Come! we’ll kiss and be friends, and think no more of the matter! only remember not to brag another time that you cannot be *taken in*, though, ha! ha! ha!’

Every thing being thus made up, their conversation for the rest of the evening was such as may be supposed between persons of their cast, and in their situation. They gloried in the success of their schemes upon their common dupe, the colonel; they formed plans for spending his fortune, should any lucky accident put an end to his life; they ridiculed the pride and self-sufficiency of which they had taken advantage; and concluded in their usual way, with proving, in each other’s arms, *the justness* of his confidence in their fidelity.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

Chrysal’s master receives an account of the death of the colonel. He finds after much deliberation that he cannot fling his worthy associate out of the whole spoil, and therefore prudently resolves to share it with her by a marriage, of which he draws a comfortable picture. He urges his suit, and she strives to evade it, by arguments consistent with both their characters. He carries his point in a particular manner.

BUT all this harmony was soon disturbed for ever, by the accomplishment of the very schemes it was founded on, which was much nearer than they imagined. The first news my master received on his return home next morning, was that the colonel had been killed in a late battle. This was an interesting event; he directly locked himself up in his closet, and taking out the will, though

though he had often read it before, studied every syllable of it over and over, to try if there was any possibility for him to *fling* his own and the colonel's common mistress, and get the whole fortune himself; but he had the mortification to find that this exceeded all his sagacity, and that the whole will must stand or fall together.

After some, not the most pleasing, meditation, therefore, 'And so!' said he, biting his nether lip, and turning up his eyes, with an execration too horrid to be repeated, 'I have been labouring all this while to get a fortune for this *brimstone*! A very pretty reward, truly, for supplanting my best benefactor! it were better for me, that even he had it, than she; for then I might not only enjoy my share of it as it goes, along with him; but also very probably cheat him out of the most of it, in the end. What, though I am to have it after her death, may not she live as long as I! Beside I have made away with the greatest part of the money, and so am liable to be *blown up* and undone, whenever she thinks proper to call it in; for I know too much of her, to expect that she should show favour to any one, when once in her power. No! that shall never be! I have it in my power to set aside the whole unnatural, nonsensical will, and I will do it, if she refuses to come into terms with me. Such a sacrifice of my own interest to gratitude and honesty, as this will appear, will gain me so great reputation, that I shall make a better fortune myself in a little time; and as to what I have embezzled, I know by experience that I can *sink* that upon my wise principal at a proper time, as I have done more before now; so that after all I may find honesty to be the best policy, as the saying is. Well! be that as it will, I am resolved to be honest to myself first, and do that which shall serve my own interest best, without regard to proverb or opinion. Let me consider, then! Suppose I marry her; and so get possession of all at once. But the devil of it is, that I must take her into the bargain; and I know her too well for that, if I could help it. She may most
likely

‘likely serve me the same trick with somebody else, that
 ‘she has served this fool with me: *once a whore and al-*
 ‘*ways a whore.* However, I must take my chance for
 ‘that. Cunning as she is, she shall not cuckold me
 ‘easily. If I am not a match for her she must be able to
 ‘outwit the devil himself; so, happy come lucky, I’ll
 ‘e’en venture.’

Having reasoned himself into this prudent resolution, he would lose no time; but went to her directly to carry it into execution. As soon as he met her, ‘I have brought
 ‘you news now,’ said he, ‘in earnest. News that will be
 ‘either good, or bad, according as you take it.’—‘Pshaw!’ answered she, slightly, ‘this is more of your *wit*, I suppose. But for heaven’s sake leave off making a fool of
 ‘yourself, and teasing me. I am quite sick of such stuff.
 ‘*Strike me to the centre,*’ replied he, passionately, ‘but I
 ‘am serious. I have this moment received an account,
 ‘that *the colonel* is actually dead. He was killed in the
 ‘late battle.’

The look with which he said this had more weight with her than all the oaths and imprecations he could utter, for, much as he was master of his countenance, he could not conceal the agitation of his mind. ‘Dead!’ interrupted she, eagerly, ‘thank heaven! then all my fears
 ‘are over.’ ‘Aye!’ replied he, dryly, ‘but it is well
 ‘if your hopes are not also over with them!’ ‘How!
 ‘What do you mean? Has he not made a will, by which
 ‘all his fortune comes directly to me? For heaven’s sake
 ‘do not torture me in this manner. Yes! he has made
 ‘a will, it is true. But don’t you know that the last
 ‘letter I received from him revoked it, so that every thing
 ‘goes now to his family, for he lived not long enough to
 ‘make another, after he received his wound; though
 ‘that is no great loss to you, for, from what he said
 ‘when he was dying, it would not have been much in
 ‘your favour. But, did you not promise me, that you
 ‘would suppress that revocation, in case any thing of this
 ‘kind should happen; which you said you had it in your
 ‘power to do, as your principal was fool enough to pro-
 ‘mise

‘mise you, that he would never open any letters that
‘should come directed to you from the army, as he had
‘a right to do, by which means it had luckily escaped
‘coming to his knowledge.’

‘Perhaps I may have said so ! But, do you think I
‘have no more conscience than to conceal such a thing ;
‘and rob a man to whom I am under so great obliga-
‘tions ?’—‘Conscience ! For heaven’s sake, I conjure you
‘again, do not torture me any longer. Speak of con-
‘science to those who do not know you. I have had suffi-
‘cient proof, that your *interest* is your *conscience* ; and
‘this will surely determine you to serve me, as you serve
‘yourself at the same time. Is not all to come to you at
‘my death ?’—‘But what am I to do in the mean while ?
‘Come, then, as you say you know me so well, I’ll offer
‘you a fair proposal, that shall make it my *present interest*
‘(for that is what I regard) to serve you ; and your *fu-
‘ture interest*, on which you lay so great a stress, to serve
‘me. Suppose we join our interests in all things, and
‘marry. By this expedient I shall come directly into the
‘enjoyment of the fortune ; and your children will in-
‘herit it.’

‘Marry !’ exclaimed she, starting in surprise, ‘what
‘could put such a strange thought into your head, who
‘know my sentiments on that unnatural state of super-
‘stition and slavery ? No ! that, of all things, I can ne-
‘ver come into. But, I see you are at your *humbugging*
‘again. The professions, and oaths of friendship, you
‘have so often made me.’—

‘Were all but wind,’ answered he, ‘and have left no
‘trace behind them. But this kind of talking answers
‘no end. The whole depends on the one word by which
‘you answer me this short question—“Will you marry
“me ? Or will you not ?” If you consent, I will se-
‘crete the papers that set aside the will, and so we shall
‘share the fortune between us. If you refuse, I will give
‘them up to his family, who will directly defeat your
‘claim, and then you may follow for your living that li-
‘bertine way of life you appear so fond of ; for I have

‘no notion of damning my character in this world, and
 ‘my soul in the next, to serve any other but myself.—
 ‘Consider, therefore, before you speak, as I will go di-
 ‘rectly from you to them, if you refuse me.’

Such a menace was not ineffectual to one who knew him so well. ‘Will nothing else satisfy you?’ replied she, bursting into tears. ‘No part of the fortune; and
 ‘to continue as we are at present, man and wife in every
 ‘thing but the cursed ceremony?’—‘No, that ceremony
 ‘is every thing I want, and nothing else; because that
 ‘only can give me a right to your fortune; for, as to
 ‘your person, I would not have you think I set any va-
 ‘lue on that, I have long since had enough of it: and
 ‘for sharing the fortune, I am resolved I will have all,
 ‘or none; and this is the reason why I make you such
 ‘an offer; for, otherwise, I assure you I hate marriage
 ‘as much as you possibly can. So let me have your an-
 ‘swer directly, for I will not trifle thus a moment lon-
 ‘ger.’—The manner in which he said this left her no
 room to doubt his resolution. ‘Well then,’ replied she,
 ‘fighing, ‘if you will have it so, it must be so; and I
 ‘consent, because I cannot help it. But when is this
 ‘blessed marriage to be solemnized?’—‘As for that, I
 ‘am in no more hurry than you. All I desire is, that
 ‘you will directly sign a promise of marriage, whenever
 ‘I think proper to call upon you. I’ll go this instant,
 ‘and draw it up; and leave you to consider how much
 ‘better this is for us both, than to have disagreed, and
 ‘let all go to his family.’ He waited not for a reply;
 nor was long before he returned with the deed, which she
 signed with evident reluctance.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Account of the methods which Chrysal’s master took to obviate the effects of his principal’s resentment, with the characteristic conversation that passed between them, on the former’s avowing the colonel’s will. Chrysal’s master overshoots his mark, and provokes his principal to do more than he ever intended. An uncommon instance of the justice of the world. Chrysal’s master obliges the
lady

lady to court him in her turn, and at length marries her. The consequences of such a marriage, and fruits of the success of all their schemes.

THIS point being settled, the next thing was to produce the colonel's will, the thought of doing which gave him some alarm, in spite of all his fortitude, as it would be throwing off the mask he had worn all his life, and declaring war with his principal, who he judged from himself would not fail to publish to the world the meanness of his original, and the misery from which his compassion had raised him. But such thoughts, disagreeable as they might be, could not divert him from his purpose. To disable his principal, though, as far as possible from carrying his resentment any farther than words, he ransacked all his papers, and took away not only such as related immediately to the private transactions between themselves but also those of other people, with whom they had been concerned in business, in order to distress his circumstances, and involve him in such perplexities as should lay him under a necessity of keeping fair with him. But this precaution, like many others dictated by the same spirit, occasioned the very thing it was designed to prevent.

The first news of this affair was like a thunder-clap to the family of the colonel. My master's principal, who, though, in the course of law and nature, had the first expectations, as I have said before, could not believe it to be true, so high was his confidence in the honesty and attachment of my master. To satisfy, however, the importunities of his family, he came to him, and with a look of indignation at the baseness of such a report, rather than apprehension of the truth of it, 'I am come,' said he, 'to tell you a piece of news, I have just this moment heard, which is, that the colonel has left his whole fortune between that jade, his mistress, and you; and that you were privy to his will, which he left in your hands when he was going abroad. But the latter part of the story makes me easy about the rest; for, whatever his capricious temper might lead him to do, I am

‘ convinced you would have no hand in so base an affair,
 ‘ nor even conceal his having such an intention from me a
 ‘ moment. I see you are shocked at the scandalous impu-
 ‘ tation; but do not think I mention it as if I believed
 ‘ it. I could not do you so much wrong.’

The first impressions of youth can never be totally ef-
 faced. Though my master could lay schemes to cheat
 his principal, and revile him behind his back, he had
 learned to look at him with an awe, when a beggar about
 his brother’s house, and afterwards his servant, that he
 could never after get over, when in his presence. This
 awe, added to the confusion of conscious guilt, made him
 unable to make any answer for some moments, and had
 wrought that change in his countenance which the other
 took notice of.

As soon as he could collect spirits to speak, ‘ I—I—
 ‘ I am obliged to every one, f—f—for their good opinion
 ‘ of me,’ said he, with his eyes fixed on the ground, and
 faltering at every word; ‘ and hope I shall not f—f—f—
 ‘ forfeit it, by accepting the favours of my friends.’—
 ‘ How!’ interrupted the other eagerly. ‘ What can you
 ‘ mean by that? You surely do not, cannot, avow!’—
 ‘ As for that, sir!’ returned my master, plucking up a
 little more assurance, ‘ what I avow or disavow is nothing
 ‘ to the purpose. I presume that my *most dear and wor-*
 ‘ *thy friend*, the colonel, had a right to leave his fortune
 ‘ to whom he pleased; and that whoever he has left it to
 ‘ has also a right to take it, without being answerable to
 ‘ your opinion, or that of any others, who may be preju-
 ‘ diced by you; for the world will judge better, and be
 ‘ satisfied that he had sufficient reasons for what he has
 ‘ done.’—‘ And so, then, it is even so!’ replied the other,
 after a long pause, ‘ and this is the return I meet for
 ‘ raising you from wretchedness, and admitting you to
 ‘ the first place in the esteem and confidence of my heart.
 ‘ Cherish a viper in your bosom, and he will sting you
 ‘ to death. But it is beneath me to upbraid you! I
 ‘ leave the revenge of my wrongs to your own conscience
 ‘ and the justice of heaven; and from this moment dis-
 ‘ claim

‘ claim all intercourse with you ; nor shall my lips ever
‘ more utter your name, if I can help it. The sight of
‘ you is a pain to me ! I will send a person to take my
‘ affairs out of your hands, and desire you will directly
‘ provide yourself another habitation ! Unhappy for me
‘ was the day, when I first gave shelter to your misery in
‘ mine.’ Saying this, he turned away, without waiting
for a reply, and left the room.

This insolent behaviour (for so my master called it, as soon as the other was gone) was such an affront to *his honour*, as in his opinion cancelled all obligations, and justified every thing he had done, or could do against him. Giving vent to his resentment, therefore, in *a burst of blasphemous execrations*, he proceeded in the execution of his schemes, with this improvement, that, to obviate the imputations of base dishonesty and ingratitude, which his own conscience told him his principal would publish to the world against him, he loaded him with every scandal that his inventive malice could suggest. But, instead of answering his purpose, produced the very contrary effect, as it put him under a necessity of laying open things to vindicate his own character, which indignant shame of having placed his confidence so unworthily would otherwise have made him conceal ; and, in this instance, the world was not dazzled by success, but directly paid his villany with the infamy it deserved.

As for the lady, fashion made it necessary for her to put on all the mimicry of woe, in which she persisted most decently for the usual time, at the end of which she found her husband that was to be, so slack in his addresses, that she was obliged to court him, as such an unsettled life was equally contrary to her interest and inclinations. This answered a double end. It gratified his vanity (for he took care to make it known) and seemed to obviate the credit of the contract between them, should it ever happen to be discovered. Accordingly, he kept off a little longer ; and at length consented, with the affected irresolution of a man of the most delicate principles and sense of honour. As he only got a legal right by his marriage

to what he was already in possession of, he soon grew tired of the state, the circumstances of which, in his particular case, could not be very pleasing to any man. However, to avoid the evils of which he was most immediately afraid, he went to live in the country, where he permitted his wife to see nobody but those he approved, and in company with himself. Nor was he satisfied that his utmost vigilance could prove effectual, as he had experience of the looseness of her principles, and her expertness in all the arts of intrigue.

Their situation, in these circumstances, may be easily conceived. Continual suspicions, quarrels, and recriminations aggravated their mutual dislike to the most rancorous hatred, and made their lives such a scene of misery, that they themselves looked upon it as a commencement of heaven's vengeance on their crimes; while all who knew them expected in horror that they would make that vengeance still more signally dreadful, by wreaking their hatred upon each other's lives, or their despair upon their own. All the advantages, thus dearly earned, were an affluence disgusting for want of power of enjoyment, except in an external pomp that only mocked the misery within, and made the meanness it was designed to hide the more remarkable.

CHAP. XL.

Chrysal's master designs to set up a coach; but wants a material article towards making a proper figure with it. He consults with a herald, who gives him an elaborate dissertation, not the most pleasing to him, on coats of arms, and the modern methods of making them, in which he unfolds many curious mysteries, and undertakes at last, on proper encouragement, to make him a gentleman. Chrysal changes his service. Conversation between his new master, and an antiquarian. Curious arguments, by which he proves the genuineness and importance of certain relics of antiquity. Chrysal changes his service.

IN this age of delicacy and refinement the first thing thought of in genteel life is a carriage, which is so indispensibly necessary to procure respect, that no eminence

nence in science, no practice of virtue is held in esteem, where that is wanted. Sensible of this, my master resolved to bespeak one, the elegance and grandeur of which should prove his taste and magnificent spirit. One difficulty though perplexed him not a little in the design. This was, his want of a coat of arms to decorate the outside of it, and display to the world his illustrious descent. After much fruitless meditation on so important a subject, it occurred to him, that a herald must be the proper person to consult with upon the best means of remedying this defect. Accordingly, he inquired for the most eminent in that way, and, on the morning fixed for his attendance, prepared to receive him, in such a manner as he imagined could not fail to inspire him with respect. He was lolling at breakfast in an elbow-chair; dressed in a morning-gown of green damask, with a red cap on his head, the cambric lining of which was edged with a rich lace, that turned up over it, and crimson velvet slippers on his feet, one of which was extended on a cushion of the same materials, to give him the appearance of the gout, a disorder which he looked upon as an incontestible proof of his being sprung from a good family, while his lady poured out his tea, and between every dish read a paragraph in the newspapers to entertain him.

As soon as the herald was shown in, my master cast an eye upon his lady, and nodding majestically towards the door, she withdrew, and left him to his business. After the usual questions about the weather, and the news, my master at length entered upon the subject. ‘I understand
 ‘S—S—S— Sir,’ said he, faltering, and almost blushing in spite of his assurance, ‘that you have great skill in heraldry; and therefore desired to see you, to consult about
 ‘my c—c—c— coat of arms.’—‘I do presume, sir,’ answered the herald with an air of importance ‘to have
 ‘some knowledge in that mysterious and sublime science,
 ‘and hope I shall not wrong the character you have received of me, in any thing in which you are pleased to
 ‘employ me. Hem! ahem! Pray, sir, what may be the
 ‘nature of your present commands? I suppose you want

‘ to introduce into your own coat, the bearing of some
‘ branch of your family, which is fallen to you. There
‘ is nothing in the world easier to be done, that is by one,
‘ who, as I said before, understands the science. It is
‘ only dividing the field properly, and taking care that
‘ the blazoning of the different quarterings, of which all
‘ good families gain many in a long course of descents,
‘ may not be wrongly blended, as colour upon colour, or
‘ metal upon metal, which you must know is false heral-
‘ dry ; though I beg pardon, your blazoning is most like-
‘ ly in precious stones, the peculiar emblems of nobility
‘ with us. But that makes no difference, as I will con-
‘ vince you, if you please to let me see your arms.’

‘ Sir,’ replied my master, still more confounded by this
jargon, ‘ that is not what I want. I would have an en-
‘ tire n—n—new coat.’—‘ O ! I understand you, sir !
‘ you are the first of your family ; and want to make arms
‘ for yourself, as none of your ancestors have left you
‘ any ! Why, sir, that too may be done ; but it must be
‘ with judgment and care, as I said before, for fear of
‘ interfering with the arms of any other family. But,
‘ you may trust me for that, sir ! Half the arms you see
‘ cut such a figure about the town are of my devising.
‘ The king may make lords and knights of whom he
‘ pleases, but it is the herald must make them gentlemen ;
‘ for what is any man without a coat of arms ? Pray, sir,
‘ what is your name ? and of what profession was your
‘ father ?’—

‘ Wh—wh—why do you ask, sir ? I suppose there
‘ cannot be any thing material to your purpose in them ?’

‘ Pardon me, good sir, they are material, very mate-
‘ rial. A name, especially if it consists of many syllables,
‘ often gives an excellent hint ; for, as much as your
‘ modern wits may affect to despise the mysterious learn-
‘ ing of *Rebuses*, wiser antiquity held it in higher repute,
‘ as you must have observed from the many illustrious
‘ *coats of arms* taken entirely from the name : and then
‘ knowledge of the profession of a gentleman’s father is
‘ absolutely necessary for many reasons. There are pro-
‘ fessions,

‘ fessions, the implements of which are never *dropped*, be-
 ‘ cause the professions themselves are reckoned honourable,
 ‘ as there also are others, nothing relating to which is
 ‘ ever *borne*, for the contrary reason. The son of a gene-
 ‘ ral or an admiral, for instance, will have his *arms*
 ‘ charged with implements of war; but *the son of a man*
 ‘ *who keeps a chandler’s shop* will never bear a lump of
 ‘ butter, or bunch of candles, nor *the son of a tailor*, a
 ‘ pair of scissars or a thimble; for these would at once
 ‘ betray what is designed to be hid; and therefore it is
 ‘ absolutely necessary that I should be informed of these
 ‘ particulars.’—

‘ B—b—b— but, sir, can you not strike out something
 ‘ entirely new, without alluding to any name or profession
 ‘ at all? I am willing to pay you well for your trouble,
 ‘ only let me have something elegant and grand.’ ‘ I
 ‘ understand you, sir. I’ll engage to please you. I’ll
 ‘ *quarter you the coat of a crowned head* in an instant,
 ‘ without any body’s being able to say a word against it.
 ‘ Leave it to me; and I’ll engage to please you; not the
 ‘ richest *contractor* or *nabob* of them all shall make such
 ‘ a figure.’—‘ And pray, sir, what is your price, for a
 ‘ job of this kind?’—‘ Price, sir? I never make bar-
 ‘ gains! let common mechanics do that? gentlemen al-
 ‘ ways make me a present, when they bespeak their ho-
 ‘ nours; and, according to the value of that, my inven-
 ‘ tion is either high or low.’ ‘ Well, sir, it shan’t sink
 ‘ on that account now. Here are ten guineas for you, as
 ‘ an earnest of what I will give, if I like your work,
 ‘ when it is done.’—‘ Sir? you may depend on having the
 ‘ *highest arms* of any man in the kingdom. Your gene-
 ‘ rosity shows that you ought to be a gentleman; and it
 ‘ shall be my fault if I don’t make you one, in the sight
 ‘ of the world.’—Saying this, he took his leave, when I
 was heartily glad to go with him, being part of the price
 paid upon this occasion for *the making of a gentleman*.

As soon as my new master went home, he retired to
 his closet, and taking out the money he had just received,
 ‘ Ha! ha! ha! no bad price for a little *daubing*!’ said
 he,

he, laughing and chinking the purse. ‘ I wonder how the
 ‘ fellow could be such an ass as to think that any thing
 ‘ in my power to do could make him pass for a gentle-
 ‘ man! But let him have his way! his folly is my gain;
 ‘ and it is no more than justice, that one who has cheated
 ‘ the world so long should cheat himself at last, and sa-
 ‘ crifice the earnings of villany to vanity! But, hold!
 ‘ this is about the time my *Antiquarian* was to come.
 ‘ Let me see those ancient manuscripts and inscriptions
 ‘ which I had done last week! Upon my life, they look
 ‘ very well. The *canker* upon this copper, and the *smoke*
 ‘ upon this parchment are as natural as if they were the
 ‘ work of a thousand years; and these *scrawls* might
 ‘ pass even for the *spells* of the witch of *Endor*, they have
 ‘ so little likeness to any marks made to convey thought,
 ‘ at this time. He is a very pretty fellow that did them,
 ‘ and deserves encouragement.’

Just as he said this, the person he expected came, and
 entering without ceremony upon his business, ‘ I called
 ‘ upon you, sir,’ said he, ‘ to see those things you men-
 ‘ tioned to me. If they are really what you describe, we
 ‘ shall not differ about the price, high as it is.’ ‘ I hope,
 ‘ sir,’ answered my master, ‘ you have not so mean an
 ‘ opinion of my judgment, as to imagine I could ever
 ‘ think of imposing upon you. No, sir! I know that to
 ‘ be impossible; even if I could be base enough to at-
 ‘ tempt it; and, therefore, would not mention any thing
 ‘ to you, that could admit of the least doubt to a person
 ‘ of your profound learning. As to the price, I could
 ‘ have had much more since I saw you; but I thought it
 ‘ but justice to their merit to offer them first to you, as
 ‘ there is no other collection in the kingdom worthy of
 ‘ them, and I am above rising in a demand I have once
 ‘ made, though infinitely short of their intrinsic value, as
 ‘ you will be convinced, the moment you see them.
 ‘ Here, sir, is the manuscript, which I had the good for-
 ‘ tune to meet with, as I was rummaging among some
 ‘ old records in our office, that had never been stirred
 ‘ since the reign of Henry the eighth. The paper in which
 ‘ it

‘ it was wrapped was so decayed, that it mouldered quite
‘ away, so immediately upon its coming into the open
‘ air, that I had scarce time to read the contents, which
‘ were that this parchment had been found in the tomb
‘ of Thomas à Becket, upon the breaking up of his
‘ shrine at the reformation, and was laid up there, on ac-
‘ count of its antiquity. That it must have been very
‘ ancient, even before his time, the colour and decay of
‘ the parchment would sufficiently prove, were there not
‘ other proofs still more convincing to such as have judg-
‘ ment to comprehend them. The shape of the letter shows
‘ its age. This manner of writing, as appears by com-
‘ paring it with other ancient manuscripts, was intro-
‘ duced in the beginning of the second century of the
‘ christian æra, and quite dropped by the middle of the
‘ third. Within that period, therefore, it must have been
‘ written. Its antiquity being thus fixed, the purport of
‘ it is next to be considered; and of that, and its im-
‘ portance, there can be no just room to doubt. This
‘ spot at the bottom of the parchment, though so much
‘ defaced by time, bears a strong resemblance to the im-
‘ pression of a mitre, and thereby proves that some bishop
‘ was the author of what was written over it, into which
‘ these four letters, m—a—t—h, fortunately so very
‘ plain, give the clearest light; for as they must have been
‘ part of the word Arimathæa, they prove that the opi-
‘ nion of Joseph of Arimathæa having first preached
‘ the gospel in Britain was known so early as in the se-
‘ cond century, and so decide that long-contested point;
‘ as, who can be such an infidel as to doubt a thing given
‘ thus, as I may say, under the sacred seal of the mitre,
‘ and that so very near the time.’

‘ Very true; but is it not as probable, that the design
‘ of this writing was to refute that opinion, as to con-
‘ firm it?’

‘ My good sir, if you allow weight to such trivial ob-
‘ jections as this, you give up all the knowledge of an
‘ antiquarian, which never amounts higher, than to possi-
‘ ble conjecture, without regard to probability even against
‘ him;

him; for conjectures such as this, founded on effaced remains of antiquity, are of much greater weight in the learned world, because they show more learning than the plainest conclusions drawn from evident and complete records, as these are obvious to any common person. But, why do I mention these things to you, who understand them so much better than I pretend to do.'—'I believe I do, sir, know something of those matters; and was satisfied both of its antiquity and importance, at the first glance of my eye; though I started that objection for mere amusement. But where is the fragment? I should be glad to see that also.'—'Here it is, sir;' answered my master, taking a bit of broken copper out of a box, in which it was carefully wrapped in cotton, 'This plate of copper was torn, in the manner you see, from the head of a sepulchral monument, on the top of Mount Libanus, by a person who had been sent thither by a celebrated society, on purpose to seek for such things; and at his return made me a present of it, as the most valuable acquisition he had made, out of gratitude for my having helped him to the job. Observe this canker, sir,! Much as it has been rubbed off in the carriage, the depth and colour of it show, that it must have been some thousands of years in gathering. What the occasion of setting it up was, some particular circumstances direct to a conjecture sufficiently probable. You see this hole, which the canker has eaten almost through the copper, with this stroke turning up over it. This certainly is the remains of the figure of a lion, as is plain from these two tufts in the middle, and at the end of the stroke, which must have been the tail of it. Now, as a lion was the emblem of Judah, it cannot be doubted but some great personage of that tribe must have been buried where this emblem was set up—a circumstance, that so clearly proves the antiquity of coats of arms, that I do not know how to think of parting with it, as it affords such an illustration to a treatise I am at this time engaged in writing on that sublime and difficult subject.'

—'Not

—‘Not part with it!’ replied the antiquarian, returning it carefully into the box, and then cramming the box into his bosom. ‘You must get it first, my good friend, to part with. Ha! ha! ha! a very pretty jest, truly; you offer a thing to sale, and set a price upon it, and then you cannot part with it! a very pretty jest, truly! Here is your money, both for the manuscript and the fragment; and when you meet with any other such precious remains of antiquity, I shall be obliged to you to let me have the preference. Nobody will give you a better price.’—Saying this, he reached my master a bank-note, which he took with an air of dissatisfaction; and while he was telling out change, ‘You do as you please with me, sir,’ said he, ‘this time; but the next I shall be more upon my guard. I am glad, however, that it goes into so noble a collection as your’s, where it will have justice done to its merit.’—‘Aye, sir!’ answered the antiquarian, with a smile of self-complacency. ‘I have been at some pains, and expence too, to make a collection; and have the satisfaction to think, that, whenever I die, it will make as good a figure in a sale catalogue as that of most of my contemporaries. I shall leave proofs behind me, that I have not spent my life in vain. What would I not give to hear the character which an able auctioneer will give of me, upon opening the sale! I wish my good friend Puff may outlive me, to have the job. There is no man sets forth the merit of any thing in such happy terms. He has words at will, as they say. What a high opinion will he raise of my learning, taste, and judgment! But that’s right—You said you wanted this fragment, for a particular occasion: I am by no means averse to obliging you. You are welcome to quote it, as in my collection, suppose in this, or some such manner, “as appears,” (proving what you have advanced before) “by a most valuable, and rare antique fragment (or whatever else you shall call it) in the most curious, or costly, or inestimable, or noble, or perhaps all these, collection of my late most learned, and judicious, and indefatigable, and

“and munificent friend,” “or whatever other titles of the kind your judgment and regard shall dictate to you.”—“I am much obliged to you for the favour,” returned my master, scarce able to restrain his laughter, “and shall be sure to avail myself of it, at the proper time, as also to do it in a manner, which, however short it may fall of your merit, will yet testify my high and respectful sense of it.”—Saying this, he gave him the change of his note, among which I was, and sent him away happy.

CHAP. XLI.

A modest method of seeking fame. Chrysal's master confirms himself in his resolution to gratify an uncommon curiosity, by a great example. The judicious and learned manner in which he classed and entered his new acquisitions. Curious remark on the value of books. He goes to an auction, where he makes an extraordinary purchase. Chrysal changes his service for that of the auctioneer. Specimen and effects of his new master's eloquence, learning, and judgment.

A MAN'S spending his life and fortune, in buying up books of learning, and obscure remains of antiquity, only to make a great sale after his death, was a method of seeking fame more modest than I had hitherto met among mankind. As soon as my new master reached home, he went directly into his musæum, and taking out his rare purchases, stared at them for some time in a kind of stupid delight, till no longer able to contain it, “What an opinion,” said he, “will the world have of me, when all these come to be shown for sale? I hope my worthy friend Puff will live to do me justice! What if I should beg of him to give me a specimen of the manner in which he will set them out? He cannot refuse me that gratification, in return for all the money he has taken from me, especially as I have told him, that I design he shall have the job. It has the sanction of one of the greatest names in antiquity to support it. Cicero, the great Cicero, desired his friend, the historian, to let him know what he intended to say of him; and need I hesitate to follow his example? Whatever has the au-
thority

'thority of antiquity must be right; and, therefore, I
 'will go to him directly about it.—But, hold! I must
 'enter these articles in my catalogue first.'—Then taking
 down an huge folio, richly bound, and inscribed Cata-
 logue, on the back and sides, in capitals of gold, he sat
 down to insert this valuable addition to his treasure, and
 opening the book with great deliberation, 'What are the
 'heads,' said he, 'under which they are to be classed?
 'Let me see! Antiques! No! that is for my coins, and
 'busts, and urns. What is the next? Ancient manu-
 'scripts and fragments! Aye! these are they. Let me
 'consider, now, what are the titles!' —Then laying
 the fore-finger of his right hand upon the tip of his nose,
 supporting his chin with his thumb, shutting his eyes,
 and leaning back in his chair, on the arm of which he
 rested his elbow, 'How unlucky it was,' resumed he,
 after a long pause, 'that he did not tell their names!
 'I was ashamed to ask him directly, though I did as
 'much, if he had minded me. But, can't I make them
 'out, from what he said? A very antique manuscript—
 'No! that will not do. Antique is for works of art;
 'ancient is the word here.—*A very ancient manuscript*
 '*written by Thomas à Becket in the second century, and*
 '*found in his tomb, at the restoration, proving that Joseph*
 '*of Arimathæa was an English bishop.*—Yes! That is it.
 'And then for the fragment—a very ancient—no, an-
 'tique. Antique is the word for fragments, they are
 'made by art—*A very antique fragment torn from a mo-*
 '*nument on Mount Libanus, proving that some great per-*
 '*son was buried there; and that a lion was the arms of*
 '*Judah.*—Aye! these will do! I knew I could make
 'them out. This is just the substance of what he said,
 'but in fewer and better words. Titles should be short
 'and pithy. *Multum in parvo*—Much in a little com-
 'pass. Let me alone for hitting off a striking title. I
 'have not been an antiquarian so long for nothing.'—
 Then conning them over twice or thrice, to try how they
 sounded, he entered them in his catalogue, and putting
 the book back into its place, sat down to contemplate his

own consequence in the learned world. But, sublime as this enjoyment was, his indefatigable industry would not permit him to indulge it long. ‘Hah!’ said he, starting, as upon sudden recollection, ‘that’s right! the sale of those Chinese characters, brought over in the last fleet, comes on about this very time. It was quite out of my head; and I would not have missed them on any account. They’ll make a capital article; for the Chinese taste is coming into such great vogue, that I suppose we shall soon learn their language; though I should be sorry to see that too; as it would lessen the value of my Chinese books; for books are now valued the more for not being understood, as I know by experience, having laid out many a pound in the purchase, of such as I understood no more of than if they were Chinese. But let those who know no other use of books but to read them buy only such as they can read; I collect mine for another purpose, and a noble collection I will have, let it cost me what it will: I care not whether I die worth a groat beside: the fame of that is fortune enough for me.’

Pursuant to this noble resolution, he went directly to the sale, where he was so charmed with the auctioneer’s learning and eloquence, that he out-bade every body, and carried off in triumph the curious, the rare, the inestimable key into all the mysterious, the profound, the sublime wisdom of that prince of all philosophers, legislators, and hierarchs, the divine Con—fut—see, and all his learned and judicious disciples and commentators, the Chinese characters, in paying for which, I changed his service for that of the auctioneer.

My new master proceeded, for the remainder of the sale, to display his abilities in the same extraordinary manner; giving circumstantial accounts of things he knew nothing of; and bestowing the most extravagant praises for excellencies of his own invention, often inconsistent with each other, and with the subject to which they were ignorantly attributed, with a confidence that bore down doubt, and gained implicit credit with the gaping crowd, in defiance

fiance to reason, and their very senses, till he led them on by little and little to pay the price of such an imaginary value. But this will be best explained by an instance that happened just after I came into his possession. The sale of that day consisted nominally of the collection of a cheesemonger lately deceased, who had been an eminent antiquarian and virtuoso. I say nominally; because, though the whole went under his name, scarce the tenth part of it had ever been his, the rest being made up from every quarter by my master. Among the *rare, curious, and costly* articles exhibited on this occasion, was a vessel of Porcelaine, of an uncommon shape, ornamented with several odd and uncouth representations of animals, and some figures not unlike the characters of a language.

‘Gentlemen,’ said my master, as soon as this was produced, ‘you here see one of the rarest, and most valuable remains of antiquity, ever brought into Europe. This *here* superb vase was the identical cup out of which the sublime emperors of China for numberless ages drank the consecrated wine, on the day of their coronation. It was found, gentlemen, among the treasures of the great Mogul, by Thomas Couli Can, when he dethroned that *there* prince, out of a wreck of whose spoils, when they were lost in passing the river of the Indies, it was saved by a Chinese Nabob, from whom it was afterwards taken, together with his crown, by *that there* heaven born general, who made those effeminate and dastardly Indians tremble at the name of an Englishman, and given by him as a precious token of his esteem to the deceased, his very learned and curious friend. This, gentlemen, is in few words the whole, full, and true account of this *here* inestimable curiosity, every word of which can be proved by unquestionable authority. As for the vase itself, exclusive of all this, its own merits give it sufficient value. Observe these *here* figures, gentlemen; they are Egyptian hieroglyphics denoting the duties of a sovereign, which those wise mandarines always take care to instruct their emperors in. This *here* lion, for instance, signifies that he must be

' courageous and valiant : this fox, that he must be wise ;
 ' and so on. But the most extraordinary thing of all,
 ' gentlemen, is these *here* characters. They are a talis-
 ' man, or charm, invented by Mahomet to protect the
 ' owner of this cup from the influence of evil spirits. I
 ' do not presume, gentlemen, to stand up for the virtue
 ' of such things. The notion of spirits, I am sensible,
 ' is much exploded ; and the religion of Mahomet cried
 ' down among us ; but still, gentlemen, without enter-
 ' ing into these *here* nice points, we all know that he was
 ' a great man, and *lived a long while ago*, which is suf-
 ' ficient to make any thing that was his of great value
 ' to men of learning, who are above prejudice in these
 ' matters. But, besides all this, these *here* characters
 ' are of the greatest importance, on another account ; as
 ' they prove beyond dispute, that *the true method of writ-*
 ' *ing the learned languages was without accents*, not one
 ' appearing, as you see, gentlemen, in the most original
 ' and authentic relic of ancient learning, and so put an
 ' end to that *there* controversy, that has so long puzzled
 ' the world. It were presumption in me, gentlemen, to
 ' attempt putting a value on a thing that is invaluable.
 ' I will, therefore, set it up at what you please, as you
 ' are the best judges. This only I will make bold to say,
 ' that the best judge of all will have it, as he will give
 ' most for it ; for too much it is impossible to give.'

So just an account, and such judicious praise, could not
 fail of effect. The virtuosi round him, satisfied that
 what he said must be true, because spoken with confi-
 dence, and above their comprehension, vied with each
 other for the possession of so inestimable a treasure, till
 they raised it to an height, at which they themselves were
 surprised, as soon as the spirit of bidding began to cool,
 and they had time to reflect.

CHAP. XLII.

*An unsavory account stops him short in his harangue.
 He turns off the jest with another, and accounts learnedly
 for what has happened. The real cause, and consequence
 of that accident. Reflections on auctioneering, and the
 uses of its success.*

CHAP.

THIS was the time for which he always reserved the highest flights of his eloquence, to raise that spirit again. Resuming, therefore, his harangue, ‘ You pause, gentlemen,’ said he, ‘ only to consider how much farther you may *rise* with safety ; for it is impossible that persons of your profound taste and judgment should disgrace them so much, as to let such a jewel go for a mere trifle. Do not take my word, gentlemen, for its value. I may be mistaken, but you cannot. Examine it, therefore, yourselves. Observe the beauty of these *here unknown* figures : *read* these *unintelligible* characters ; and smell the aromatic odour which the vase still retains, and ever will retain, from the quintessences of all the spices of the Indies, which used to be mixed with the consecrated wine. The perfume is almost enough to revive the dead.’

Saying this, he went to smell it himself, to lead the way to the rest, and putting the mouth of it to his nose, without taking off the cover, that the fragrance should not evaporate, as he raised his hand, a stream, that emitted a favour far from aromatic, gushed out into his face, and filled his mouth, as well as nose, with something more substantial than perfume. It is impossible to describe his situation, at such a disgraceful accident.— Surprise, shame, and loathing aggravated each other, and threw him into such confusion, as once in his life deprived him of utterance for some moments. As soon as he had emptied his mouth, and wiped his face, ‘ Villain,’ sputtered he, to his servant, ‘ how has this happened ? Whom have you let play me this base, malicious, low-lived trick ?’—‘ S—S—Sir,’ answered the fellow, as well as his struggle to suppress his laughter permitted him to speak, ‘ I know nothing of the matter, I never left any one a moment alone among the things, but *them there* ladies, who I told you sent me out for a glass of ratafia, the other morning, and how could I have suspected their doing such a thing ?’—‘ Ratafia !’ replied my master, who had by this time recovered his assurance, and knew the best way to turn off one jest by another,

another, 'Gin, you should say; for, if I can judge by taste
'and smell, that is their liquor. I suppose they did it
'on purpose to revenge their sex upon Mahomet, for tak-
'ing away their souls (I wish he had also taken away the
'filthiness of their dispositions) by defiling so celebrated
'a monument of his learning and skill, in this nasty man-
'ner, Ha! ha! ha!'

The oddity of such a thought naturally made the com-
pany join in his laugh; but could not so far wipe off the
disgrace which the defiled vase had suffered, as to make
any more be offered for it, so that it was forced to be
knocked down to the last bidder, at not much more than
if it had been made of gold, at which the purchaser and
my master were equally mortified, though for different
and with very unequal reasons. As for the cause of this
misfortune, it was really what the servant said. One of
the ladies who came to view the curiosities having certain
pressing occasions, feigned a pretence to send him out;
and in the mean time made such use of this vase, being
the first conveniency that came to her hand, as over-
powered the scent of some spices, which had been put into
it for the purpose. It was fortunate for my master, that
this was the last article in the sale of that day, as a spi-
rit of ridicule could not be favourable to his business.—
As soon as the company were gone, he settled his ac-
counts, and summing up the profits, 'Why this is pretty
'well!' said he, rubbing his hands, and shrugging up his
shoulders, 'this does pretty well! Though, if that damn'd
'accident had not happened,' turning up his nose, and
spitting with loathing, 'it would have been much
'better. The fools were in the humour, and wanted
'only to be kept up. However, I have not much right
'to complain upon the whole. That *there* Jordan cost
'me five shillings, and I have sold it for fifty pounds.
'Much good may the judicious buyer make of his bar-
'gain. This is the happiness of a man's having his
'tongue well hung. A mealy mouth will never do for
'my business; which after all is the best going. I might
'have stood freezing behind a counter this month, and not
'made

‘made half this much, in the way of fair trade, as it is
‘called, people have their senses about them, and stand
‘to examine before they buy, but any trumpery will go
‘off in this way.’

I have observed your astonishment at the easiness with which my master succeeded in such gross imposition; but the reason of it is obvious. All mankind have an ambition of distinguishing themselves, one way or another; and generally choose that, in which they have the least qualifications to entitle them to success, in order to hide their own deficiency. The coward, for instance, affects valour; the blockhead knowledge; and the illiterate tradesman, who has made a fortune by plodding on in some illiberal business, taste and judgment in the abstrusest pursuits of learned curiosity, in which, as there is no fixed rule to judge by, caprice takes the direction, and opens an ample field for imposition. As to the business of auctioneering in general, it owes the greater part of that success, with which my master was so well pleased, to another cause—the desire of buying bargains, which governs every one who buys any thing, makes people crowd to those places, where things are to be sold, not as in the regular course of trade, for what they appear to be worth, but for the most that can be got for them; and there emulation, dependence on each other’s judgment, ‘those people know what they are doing, and would not bid so
‘much, if it was not worth more,’ and the oratory of the auctioneer leads them by insensible advances, as their spirits rise, to give prices, which they never meant to give, when they began to bid. That great bargains are often got at such places is true, but that is chiefly in a particular branch of the business, the mystery of which will be explained to you.

CHAP. XLIII.

Chrysal’s master is visited by a connoisseur, to whom he gives a short receipt how to make his pictures sell, and makes some striking remarks, on the disregard people show for their families, which sends his visitor away in a huff.

MY master was interrupted in his pleasing meditations, by the entrance of a gentleman, the sight of whom promised him the greatest pleasure of carrying the subject of them into execution. After some judicious remarks on the taste of the town, and the present state of *virtu*, in the course of which each liberally complimented the other, ‘Pray, sir,’ said the gentleman, ‘how do pictures sell this season?’—‘Never better, sir,’ answered my master. ‘Pictures are every body’s money, now. A good master brings any thing; and what is more, I am convinced they will rise still higher, so that buyers have no time to lose. I have a sale next week, when you will see such prizes as will astonish you. There are some things there, that I know you will have, let them cost what they will, they suit your fine collection so exactly.’—‘Why as to that,’ replied the gentleman, ‘my mind is a good deal changed. I have taken it into my head lately to part with my pictures, and have therefore called upon you to desire that you will come in the morning, and let me know what you think they are worth.’—‘Worth, sir! they are worth a great deal of money; which there is not the least danger but they will bring, if they are managed properly. There is more, sir, in the management of a sale, much more than most people dream of, I assure you.’—‘I am sensible of that, sir; and also of your abilities in such management, which you will have the best encouragement to exert on this occasion, as I propose selling the whole to you together, if we can agree.’

This turn came so unexpected that it struck my master quite down in the mouth, as he was sensible that he had over-shot himself, and spoiled his market by saying so much. ‘It is very unlucky, sir,’ answered he, changing his note directly, ‘that I did not know your intention sooner. I could then have divided them properly among the several sales of the season; but it is now quite too late; this *bere* one next week is the last; and the catalogues for that are all made out, and dispersed, so that there is no possibility of *slipping* in a single article.

‘Besides,

‘ Besides, the buyers have laid out all their money.’—
‘ Slipping in, sir, I do not understand you. Do not
‘ you think my pictures are sufficient, both in number and
‘ value, to make a sale by themselves? I am sure, I have
‘ more than once known you make noise enough about
‘ collections in no respect equal to mine. There must
‘ be some mystery in this, which I cannot comprehend.’
‘ —‘ Very true, sir, there are mysteries, as you observe,
‘ in all businesses; and perhaps in none more than ours.’
‘ —I am not inquiring into your mysteries. All I de-
‘ sire to know is, why, after just telling me that pictures
‘ never bore so high a price as at this time, and that mine
‘ could not fail of bringing a great deal of money, you
‘ should so soon change your opinion.’—

‘ Pardon me, sir, I have not changed my opinion in the
‘ least; and shall be very proud to serve you to the best
‘ of my abilities, in the way of a sale; but there is a ma-
‘ terial reason, why I must beg to be excused in buying
‘ them, to stand the hazard of it myself.’—‘ I should be
‘ glad to know what that reason can be, for I must own
‘ I cannot conceive it.’—‘ Why, sir, it is a thing to be
‘ sure that may seem odd to you; but experience has
‘ taught us the truth of it. In short, sir, it is your be-
‘ ing alive.’—‘ How! my being alive! What difference
‘ can my life or death make in the value of my pictures?’
‘ —A very great one, sir, I assure you. In all the course
‘ of my business, I never knew one instance of a sale’s
‘ going off well, where the owner was living. People
‘ conclude that a person parts with pictures either through
‘ dislike, or necessity. The former, you know, depre-
‘ ciates them at once; nor does the other much less; as
‘ people of fashion despise a man, and every thing belong-
‘ ing to him, the moment it is known that he is in dis-
‘ tress. Besides, an auctioneer’s tongue is tied up from
‘ saying any thing of a person’s taste, and judgment, and
‘ all that, while he is living, it sounds so fulsome; and
‘ you are sensible that a good character of the collector
‘ often goes a great way in helping off a collection.’—
‘ The best thing, then, for a man to do on such an occa-
‘ sion,

' sion, I presume, would be to shoot himself through the
 ' head! Heh?'—'Ha! ha! ha! You are pleased to jest,
 ' sir; but to be sure it would be of great advantage. Cu-
 ' riosity brings all the world upon those occasions, and
 ' then a man has an opportunity of saying so many things,
 ' as that the deceased would not take ten times so much,
 ' if he were living; or, that the high price he gave for
 ' it caused the distress that made him kill himself; or a
 ' thousand other striking things of the kind. I never
 ' have so much pleasure as upon those occasions, they give
 ' a man such room to show himself. Indeed, if gentle-
 ' men considered the thing in time, more of them would
 ' take this method of delivering themselves and their fa-
 ' milies both from distress, and not defer it till all is gone,
 ' and the survivors can make nothing by their death; but
 ' few people take any care for their families now o'days.
 ' It is a bold push, to be sure; though not so bad as a
 ' man's shooting himself to win a wager, neither. I
 ' should beg your pardon, sir, for speaking so freely, but
 ' as I know it is not your case, you cannot take offence;
 ' though, even if I thought it was, I would not presume
 ' to recommend such a thing, for the world. Every person
 ' is to judge for himself. I only give you my opinion
 ' what effect it would have.'—'I understand you very
 ' well, sir,' answered the gentlemen, who had much dif-
 ' ficulty to hear him out, 'and in return for your opi-
 ' nion will give you my advice, which is, to consider bet-
 ' ter whom you speak to in this insolent manner another
 ' time, for fear of receiving such chastisement, as contempt
 ' alone prevents my giving you this moment.'—On say-
 ' ing which words he turned about, and left the room.

CHAP. XLIV.

*Chrysal's master receives an agreeable summons. His en-
 comiums on the generosity of merchants, and account of the
 way many of them acquire reputation for taste and judgment.
 He meets the merchant, who consults him on a different
 branch of his business from that which he expected. Chrysal's
 master, in order to encourage his customer, gives a large ac-
 count of his own abilities, and opens some curious secrets in
 his*

his business. A bargain is struck, to the mutual satisfaction of both parties; and Chrysal changes his service for that of the merchant.

WELL as my master was accustomed to rebukes, there was something in the nature of this which disconcerted him so much, that he had not power to make the gentleman any reply. But he was soon relieved from the trepidation into which it threw him, by a message from an eminent merchant, to meet him directly at a neighbouring tavern. 'Aye,' said he, adjusting his wig at the glass, and putting on his cloak, 'this is the thing! There is some difference between treating with a good substantial citizen, who will mind what a man says, and your people of fashion, who fly into a rage, forsooth, if they can't have their own way, in every thing. No people part with their money so freely as merchants. They don't stand higgling, and criticizing like the others. All they require is, to be asked a good price, and then they think a thing must be good of course. Many a time have I got five times more from a merchant, than I dared to have asked from a duke. I suppose he wants to show his taste next week at the sale; and has sent for me, to tell him which are the best pieces, and how much he may bid for them. He is not the first citizen whom my instructions have made pass for a man of taste and judgment. I love such pupils, they pay so well for their learning; and that more ways than one; for they buy what no body else would bid for; it is only slipping a puffer or two of quality at them, enough of whom come sharking to every sale for that purpose only, and they may be raised to any price. No people part with their money like merchants.'

When he came to the tavern, he found the merchant waiting for him. After the compliments common upon such occasions were politely interchanged, 'I desired to see you,' said the merchant, proceeding to business, though not without evident confusion, 'on an affair, that will convince you of my confidence in your abilities and honour. Trade, as you know, has been so dead for
some

‘ some time past, that there is no getting in a penny of
‘ money, without tearing people to pieces. Now, as I
‘ had rather suffer something myself, than oppress any
‘ honest man, till he can bring his affairs about, I should
‘ be glad to dispose of some parcels of goods, even under
‘ their value, to raise money for present occasions, that
‘ is, provided it can be done in such a manner, as not to
‘ be known, as such a thing might injure a man’s credit.’
‘ Dear sir,’ answered my master, whose heart leaped with
joy, at the mention of such an affair, ‘ never fear that;
‘ I’ll engage to manage it so, that if every one who knows
‘ you were to watch, they’d never even suspect the least
‘ of the matter. There is nothing easier, nor more com-
‘ mon in the way of business; and it luckily happens, that
‘ I have the finest opportunity, at this very time, that
‘ ever I had in my life. I have a large sale under a com-
‘ mission, the very week after next, into which I can hedge
‘ a thousand or two, with the greatest ease and safety.
‘ Assignees never take notice of such things. We under-
‘ stand one another better than that. Many a worthy man
‘ have I enabled to hold his head above water, for years,
‘ by this method. To be sure, it must have an end some
‘ time; but then a man stands in fortune’s way for a lucky
‘ hit, you know; and not only that, but also makes sure
‘ of so much good living, in the mean time, and can be no
‘ worse at the last: and then, when all comes to all, and
‘ there must be a *blow-up*, it gives him an opportunity
‘ of securing something against a rainy day, as the say-
‘ ing is. As for its being discovered, there are ways
‘ enough to prevent that. It is but entering them as sold,
‘ and I’ll find a buyer, that shall never be heard more of.
‘ Lord, sir, if it was not for things of this kind, our busi-
‘ ness would be nothing to what it is. Half the sales you
‘ see every day in the papers are made up in this manner.’
—‘ Well, sir,’ replied the merchant, who had listened to
him with attention, and seemed greatly affected at some
part of what he said, ‘ I presume you understand your
‘ business, and as I have no doubt of your honour, I shall
‘ leave the whole entirely to your management. Here is
‘ an

‘ an account of the particulars which I want to dispose of
‘ at this time. They are in a private warehouse, whither
‘ I have had them conveyed, to be ready for the purpose,
‘ of which this is the key; and here is a bill of sale,
‘ which I will execute directly, as I have an occasion for
‘ two thousand pounds this very evening. You see there
‘ is value, more than sufficient for double that sum, as
‘ you will be a better judge when you see the goods, but
‘ the rest can stand forward till they are disposed of, and
‘ the account made up.’—‘ Really, sir, I should be ex-
‘ tremely glad to serve you, but I fear, I have not so
‘ much cash by me. However, if you please, I’ll go with
‘ you, and look at the goods; and then I’ll step home,
‘ and try what I can do.’

Accordingly, away they went together to the ware-
house; where my master being satisfied with the value of
the goods, left the merchant, and hied him home directly
with a joyful heart for the money. ‘ So!’ said he, to
himself, as he went along, ‘ I thought what things
‘ would come to, in the end! His coach, and country-
‘ house! his wife’s routes; and his own kept mistress
‘ have made quick work with him. I believe such men
‘ must imagine the rest of the world to be blind, or they
‘ would never go on at such a rate. I suppose he’s pre-
‘ paring for a place in the gazette to morrow, or next day.
‘ But that is no affair of mine. I’ll take care to make a
‘ safe bargain for myself; and let him look to the rest. I
‘ am not to swear for him. Of all the business in our
‘ way, I like this the best. A man can make up what
‘ account he pleases, without danger of its being disputed
‘ with him. All here is snug and secure. If I could but
‘ get jobs enough of this kind, I’d let who would chaffer
‘ for toys and daubings with people of quality, who often
‘ out-sharp us, in spite of all our experience.’

By this time he reached home, where he soon made up
the money, with the help of that and the former day’s
sale, without hesitating a moment at its not being his
own, and taking with him proper persons to attest his bar-
gain, and new locks to make sure of it, returned to the
VOL. III. P merchant,

merchant, with whom he soon concluded every thing, without scruple or delay on either side, and then paying him on the spot, in bank-notes and cash (among the latter of which I was) sent him away, as well satisfied, as he himself staid behind.

CHAP. XLV.

Motive of Chrysal's new master for making such a bargain, with the many and great advantages a merchant may make of being in the House. A short sketch of an election. The curious methods which Chrysal's master took, to evade the laws against bribery. He takes offence at the unreasonable presumption of his constituents, and resolves to make the most of the bargain he has bought from them, which by a singular piece of management he proposes to make cheaper than they think. Chrysal changes his service for that of the idol of an inn. The consequences of electioneering. Some account of Chrysal's new mistress. He quits her service for a curious purpose. An expedient to prevent the sale of poison for mind and body. Chrysal again changes his service.

WHEN a man has fixed his mind upon gaining a particular end, he flights any inconveniencies which may attend the means. Though my new master was sensible of the loss he must suffer by his bargain, the prospect of accomplishing the purpose for which he made it prevented its giving him any concern. As soon as he got home, he gave orders to have his equipage made ready for a journey into the country, early next morning, and then retiring into his closet, for a few moments, before he went to bed, 'At length,' said he, with a look of self-congratulation, 'I shall compass, what I have so long set my heart upon. What an advantage it is for a merchant to be in the House! I can laugh at bailiffs and bankruptcies for five years at least; and in the meantime I shall have a thousand opportunities of making my fortune, by pushing boldly in the alley, now that all fears of the immediate consequences are over, or getting beneficial contracts with the government, or at least some genteel and profitable employment under it. A merchant may make many advantages of being in
the

' the House ! Confound that prating fellow ! I was once
 ' afraid that he smoaked my design, he came so near some
 ' unlucky circumstances ; but it was above his cut. All
 ' his schemes are common, and low-lived. This of mine
 ' is a master-stroke. It is playing deep, to be sure ! Fif-
 ' teen hundred for my seat ; and what with other ex-
 ' pences, and the loss upon this night's work, as much
 ' more. It is playing damn'd deep. But it is too late to
 ' think of that now. I have sported many a thousand up-
 ' on a worse chance in my time. At any rate, I can
 ' laugh at bailiffs and bankruptcies for five years at least.
 ' What an advantage it is to a merchant to be in the House !

Saying this, he went to bed, where the advantages of
 being in the House still ran so strongly in his head, that
 he dreamed of nothing all night, but bullying creditors,
 and cringing to ministers ; doing jobs, and getting con-
 tracts, places, and pensions.

In pursuance of his scheme, he set out next morning,
 with a splendid retinue, for the borough he had in view,
 where he managed matters with such judgment and gene-
 rosity, keeping the whole town drunk from the moment
 he arrived, according to the policy which permits a can-
 didate to deprive his electors of their senses, in order to
 enable them to judge the better of his legislative abilities,
 that he was elected in preference to a gentleman, the
 munificence of whose family had for many generations
 been the chief support of the place, and who himself spent
 his ample fortune in hospitality and beneficence in it, but
 disdained to buy the votes of a venal crew, on this occa-
 sion. As such a competitor naturally had every man of
 worth and honour in his interest, it had been necessary for
 my master to proceed with the utmost care and circum-
 spection. Accordingly, instead of directly giving his
 voters money, he lent them the prices stipulated, on the
 security of their notes of hand, payable in a certain time,
 an expedient, in which he had a further view, than barely
 evading the laws against such practices.

Every thing being concluded, he was preparing to de-
 part in triumph, when his constituents waited upon him

in form, with certain instructions, for executing the trust they had thus reposed in him. Though he looked upon this as such a bare-faced piece of insolence, that he scarce knew how to bear it, yet, as he had not yet taken his seat, he received their commands with the politest humility, and promised the most faithful obedience to them. But they were no sooner out of his sight, than he changed his note. ‘Impudent, unreasonable scoundrels!’ said he to himself, giving vent to his indignation, as he walked backward and forward in the room, ‘to talk of having
‘reposed your trust in me, and pretend to give me in-
‘structions! I have *bought you*; and I will *sell you* to the
‘best bidder, if he were the devil; and a bad bargain he
‘will have of you, if he buys you as dear as I have.—
‘Though I have a stroke in my head, to bring myself
‘home, that you little think of. Those notes of hand,
‘which you thought I took only to evade the law, shall
‘be paid to the last farthing, if I am not chosen for no-
‘thing, next election. You shall find you have no fool
‘to deal with.’

Just as he said this, he received notice that his coach was ready, and the landlord’s daughter coming to wish him a good journey, he saluted her politely, and slipping a couple of guineas (one of which I was) into her hand, to buy a ribbon, left the house like a man of honour. I have not entered particularly into the circumstances of electioneering. They are too gross to give pleasure; and too well known to require repetition even to you. The effects, I mean immediately in the place, were such as reason may suggest to you. The electors, instead of making any advantage of the price for which they thus had literally sold their consciences, liberties, and properties, continued to wallow in drunkenness, till every penny of it was spent, after which it was so long before they could settle rightly to work again, that it required a year’s hard labour and starving to repair what they suffered by this bout of excess and idleness. My new mistress was what is not unjustly called the idol of an inn. Endowed by nature with prettiness enough to entitle her
to

to flattery, and sufficient pertness to make her a coquette, on her return from a boarding-school, where her natural talents were so well improved by education, that she was thought fit to try her fortune in the world, she took her place in the bar, and flirted away with every gentleman that came to the house, in hopes of taking in some one of the number for marriage, as others in her way had done. The first passion of the female heart is for finery, to the gratification of which girls seldom fail to apply all the money in their power. But though my mistress was very far from being insensible to this passion, another scarce less powerful with the sex took place of it at this time, which was curiosity.

A young officer, who had lately been quartered in the house, and made warm addresses to her, had said so many fine things in praise of a certain book, called *Memoirs of a Lady of Pleasure*, that she resolved to see it, and for that purpose applied at a circulating library in the town, the keeper of which told her, it was so *scarce* and *valuable* a book, that he could not possibly procure it for her under a guinea. High as this price was, she would have found means to raise it, so strong was her curiosity, had not the hurry of the election, which just then came on, taken up all her time. But every obstacle was now removed, and the very evening I came into her possession, she muffled herself up in one of the maid's cloaks, and went for it as soon as it was dark, when I was the purchase of *this extraordinary bargain*.

I see you are shocked at the dishonesty and wickedness of my new master for hiring out at such a price, or indeed at any price at all, a book, whose obvious design (and which it is too well calculated to accomplish) is to supplant every principle of virtue in the youthful mind. But the blame rests not solely upon him. The excuse, which the poet puts into the mouth of the apothecary for selling poison, that, '*his poverty, but not his will consented,*' may with equal justice be alledged in palliation of a poor bookseller's vending impious or immoral books, the poison of the mind. For this reason, as no penalty,

however severe, may be sufficient to combat that necessity, the most effectual way to prevent the vending of either poison would be to prohibit all those, whose poverty might subject them to such temptation, from trading in books or drugs of any kind; as it is most certain, that if there were neither poor apothecaries, nor poor book-sellers, the sale of both vicious books, and noxious drugs, would be much less extensive than it is, if it could not be totally suppressed; there being very few of the human species so entirely given up to a reprobate sense, as to murder either the soul or body of a fellow creature, merely for the pleasure of doing it.

It may be judged that I did not remain long in the service of this master. The next morning after I came into his possession, he came to London, where he laid out all the money he had in the purchase of a parcel of such books as he thought most likely to suit the taste of his customers, without regard either to virtue or religion, on which occasion I changed his service for that of his bookseller.

CHAP. XLVI.

Account of Chrysal's new master, his heroic spirit, and resolution to push for a pension or a pillory. Meeting between him and a poet, who turns the tables upon him. A curious method of forming a judgment of a work of genius. Chrysal's master is beaten out of all his art, and for once bought a book by quality, not quantity. The value of an author's name. Chrysal changes his service.

MY new master was one of those aspiring geniuses whom desperate circumstances drive to push at every thing, and court consequences, the bare apprehension of which terrifies men, who have some character and fortune to lose, out of their senses. He was that evening to meet at a tavern an author, the boldness and beauty of whose writings had for some time engaged the public attention in a particular manner, and made his numerous admirers tremble for his safety. As he happened to outstay his time, my master's importance took offence at a freedom, which he thought so much out of character:

‘ This

‘ This is very pretty, truly ! ’ said he, walking backward and forward in a chafe, ‘ that I should wait an hour for an author. It was his business to have been here first, and waited for me ; but he is so puffed up of late, that he has quite forgot himself. Booksellers seldom meet with such insolence from authors. I should serve him right, to go away and disappoint him. But would not that disappoint myself more ! He is come into such vogue lately, that the best man in the trade would be glad to get him. Well ! if he does not do what I want, I know not who can ! Fools may be frightened at the thoughts of a cart’s tail, or a pillory, I know better things. Where they come in a popular cause, nothing sets a man’s name up to such advantage ; and that is the first step toward making a fortune ; as for the danger, it is only a mere bug-bear, while the mob is on my side. And, therefore, I will go on without fear, if I am not bought off. A pension or a pillory is the word. ’—

These heroic meditations were interrupted by the entrance of the author, who throwing himself carelessly into a chair, ‘ I believe I have made you wait, ’ said he, ‘ but I could not help it. I was obliged to stay to kick a puppy of a printer, who had been impertinent : as I am to meet company directly, so let me hear what you have to say. ’—‘ I thought, sir, ’ answered my master, with an air of offended importance, ‘ you had appointed me to meet you here on business, and business, you know, cannot be hurried over so soon. ’—‘ Don’t mention business to me ! I hate the very name of it ; and as to any that can possibly be between you and me, it may be done in five minutes, as well as five years : so speak directly, and without further preamble, for all your finesses could have no effect upon me, even if I would submit to let you try them. ’—‘ Finesses, sir ! I don’t know what you mean ! I defy the world to charge me with having ever been guilty of any. The business I desired to meet you upon, was about a poem, I was informed you had ready for the press, and which I should be glad to treat with you for. ’—‘ Well, sir ! and
‘ what

‘ what will you give me for it ? Be quick ; for I cannot
‘ wait to make many words.’—‘ What ! before I have
‘ seen it ! It is impossible for me to say, till I have looked
‘ it over, and can judge what it is, and how much it will
‘ make !’—‘ As to your judging what it is, that must de-
‘ pend upon inspiration, which I imagine you will scarcely
‘ make pretence to, till you turn *methodist* a least ; but
‘ for what it will make, here it is ; and you may judge
‘ of that, while I go down stairs for a few minutes.’
Saying which he gave him a handful of loose papers, and
left the room.

The first thing my master did, when left thus to form
his judgment of a work of genius, was to number the
pages, and then the lines in a page or two, by the time
he had done which the author returned, and taking the
papers out of his hand, ‘ Well, sir,’ said he, ‘ and what
‘ is the result of your judgment ?’—‘ Why really, sir,’
answered my master, after some pause, ‘ I hardly know
‘ what to say. I have *cast off the copy*, and do not think it
‘ will make more than a shilling, however pompously
‘ printed.’—‘ What you think it will make is not the
‘ matter, but what you will give me for it. I sell my
‘ works by the quality, not the quantity.’—‘ I do not
‘ doubt the quality of them in the least ; but considering
‘ how much the trade is over-stocked at present, and what
‘ a mere drug poetry has long been, I am a good deal at
‘ a loss what to offer, as I should be unwilling to give
‘ you or any gentleman offence, by seeming to underva-
‘ lue your works. What do you think of five guineas ;
‘ I do not imagine that more can be given for so little ;
‘ nor indeed should I be fond of giving even that, but
‘ in compliment to you. I have had full twice as much
‘ for two, many a time.’—‘ Much good may your bar-
‘ gain do you, sir ; but I will not take less than fifty for
‘ mine in compliment to you, or any bookseller alive ; and
‘ so sir, I desire to know without more words (for I told
‘ you before that your eloquence would be thrown away
‘ upon me) whether you will give that ; as I am in
‘ haste to go to company, much more agreeable to me
‘ than

‘than your’s.’—‘What, sir! fifty guineas for scarce five hundred lines! Such a thing was never heard of in the trade.’—‘Confound your trade, and you together! Here waiter! what is to pay?’—‘But, dear sir,! why will you be in such a hurry? Can you not give yourself and me time to consider a little? Perhaps we might come nearer to each other!’—‘I have told you before, and I repeat it again, that I will have so much; and that without more words.’—‘You are very peremptory, sir; but you know your own value; and therefore, in hopes you will let me have more for my money next time, I will venture to give you your price now; though really, if it was not for your *name*, I could not possibly do it; but to be sure that is worth a shilling extraordinary I own.’

‘Which is twelve-pence more than your’s ever will be, unless to the ordinary of newgate. But, come, give me the money! I want to go to my company.’—‘Well, sir! this is a hasty bargain; but I take it upon your word; and don’t doubt but there is merit in it, to answer such a price. Satire, sir! keen satire, and so plain that he who runs may read, as the saying is, is the thing now o’ days. Where there is any doubt or difficulty in the application, it takes off the pleasure from the generality of readers, who will scarce be satisfied with less than the very name. That, sir, is your great merit. Satire must be personal, or it will never do.’—‘Personal! that mine never shall be. Vices, not persons, are the objects of my satire, though where I find the former, I never spare the latter, be the rank and character in life what it will.’

My master had by this time counted out his money (among which I was) which the author took without telling over, and then went to his company, leaving the bookseller scarcely more pleased with his bargain, than mortified at the cavalier treatment he had met in making it.

CHAP. XLVII.

Some account of the company to which Chrysal’s new master went. His behaviour to a young female, who accompanied

costed him in his way home. He takes her to a tavern for an uncommon purpose, where he treats her uncommonly, and goes home with her from as uncommon a motive. Account of what he saw in her habitation with the manner in which he behaved there. He takes another lodging for the whole family, where he leaves them abruptly, to save himself and them trouble.

THE company to which my new master was in such haste to go, consisted of a few persons, whom a familiarity of temper had linked in the closest intimacy.— With these he spent the remainder of the evening, in a manner which few would dislike, though fewer still could approve it; the spirited wit and liveliness of their conversation gilding the grossest debaucheries; at the same time that the rectitude and sublimity of their sentiments, whenever their hearts could find opportunity to speak, made the vices of their practice still more horrible by the contrast. They broke not up, as it may be imagined, till nature sunk under their excesses, when my master, as he staggered home, was accosted by a female, who had something in her air and manner so different from those outcasts of humanity, who offer themselves to casual prostitution in the streets, that his curiosity was struck, and he stopped to take more particular notice of her. She appeared to be about fifteen. Her figure was elegant; and her features regular; but want had sicklied over their beauty; and all the horrors of despair gloomed through the languid smile she forced, when she addressed him.

The sigh of distress which never struck his ear without affecting his heart, came with double force from such an object. He viewed her with silent compassion for some moments; and reaching her a piece of gold, bade her go home, and shelter herself from the inclemencies of the night, at so late an hour. Her surprise and joy at such unexpected charity overpowered her. She dropped upon her knees, in the wet and dirt of the street, and raising her hands and eyes towards heaven, remained in that posture for some moments, unable to give utterance to the gratitude that filled her heart. She

Such a sight was more expressive than all the powers of eloquence. He raised her tenderly from the ground, and soothing her with words of comfort, offered to conduct her to some place, where she might get that refreshment of which she appeared to be in too great want.

‘Oh, sir,’ said she, pressing the hand that had raised her with her cold trembling lips, ‘my deliverer sent from heaven to save me from despair, let me not think of taking refreshment myself, till I have first procured it for those, whose greater wants I feel ten thousand times more severely than my own.’—‘Who can they be?’ interrupted he, with anxious impatience. ‘Can humanity feel greater wants than those under which you are sinking?’—‘My father,’ exclaimed she, bursting into tears, ‘languishing under infirmities, acquired in the service of his country; my mother worn out with attending on him, and both perishing of want, (heaven grant they are not already dead!) together with two infant brothers, insensible of the cause of their distress, and crying to them for a morsel of bread, which it is not in their power to give!’—‘Where can such a scene of wretchedness be hidden from relief? I will go with you directly: but stop; let us first procure some comfortable nourishment from some of the houses which are kept open at this late hour for a very different purpose. Come with me, we have no time to lose.’

With these words, he went directly to a tavern, and inquiring what victuals were dressed in the house, loaded her with as much as she could carry of the best, and putting a couple of bottles of wine in his own pocket, walked with her to her habitation, which was in a blind alley, happily for her not very far distant, as weakness together with the conflict of passions struggling in her heart, made her scarce able to go.

When they came to the door, she would have gone up first for a light, but he was resolved to accompany her, that he might see the whole scene in its genuine colours. He, therefore, followed her up to the top of the house, where opening the door of the garret, she discovered
to

to him such a scene of misery, as struck him with astonishment. By the light of a lamp, that glimmered in the fireless chimney, he saw lying on a bare bedstead, without any other covering than the relics of their own rags, a man, a woman, and two children shuddering with cold, though huddled together, to share the little warmth which exhausted nature still supplied them with.

While he stood gazing in horror at such complicated wretchedness, his conductress ran to the bed side, and falling on her knees, 'O! Sir! Madam!' exclaimed she, in rapture, 'Arise! I have got relief from an angel of heaven.'—'Take care!' answered a voice, the hollow trembling of which was sharpened by indignation, 'take care it is not from a fiend of hell, who has taken advantage of your distress to tempt you to ruin! for with whom else could you be till this time of night? But know, wretched girl, that I will never eat the earnings of vice and infamy. A few hours will put an end to my miseries, which have received the only possible addition by this your folly.'—'He must be such, indeed,' interrupted my master, still more struck with sentiments so uncommon in such a situation, 'who could think of tempting her in such circumstances to any folly. I will withdraw, while you arise, and then we will consult what can be soonest done to alleviate a distress, of which you appear so undeserving.'—While he said this, he took the wine out of his pockets, and giving it to the daughter, went directly down stairs, without waiting for a reply, and walking backward and forward in the street for some time, enjoying the sublimest pleasure the human heart is capable of, in considering how he had relieved, and should further relieve, the sufferings of objects so worthy of relief.

By the time he thought they might have learned from their daughter the circumstances of her meeting with him, and taking some nourishment, he returned to them, when the moment he entered the room the whole family fell upon their knees to thank him. Such humiliation was more than he could bear. He raised them one by one, as fast as he could, and taking the father's hand, 'Gra-

cious



Designed by J. Burney. Engraved by C. Warren.

The humanity of the Author, in relieving
the distress'd relatives of the unfortunate
female, who had accosted him in the street.

Vide Vol. III. Chap. 17. Page 180.

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

Printed for C. Cooke. Dec: 9. 1797.

‘cious God!’ said he, ‘can a sense of humanity be such
‘an uncommon thing among creatures who call them-
‘selves human, that so poor an exertion of it should be
‘thought deserving of a return proper to be made only to
‘heaven! Oppress me not, sir, I conjure you, with the
‘mention of what it would have been a crime I could ne-
‘ver have forgiven myself to have known I had not done.
‘It is too late to think of leaving this place before to-
‘morrow, when I will provide a better, if there is not
‘any to which you choose particularly to go. I am not
‘rich; but I thank heaven that it has blest me with
‘ability and inclination to afford such assistance as may
‘be immediately necessary to you, till means may be
‘thought of for doing more.’—‘O, sir,’ answered the
mother, ‘well might my daughter call you an angel of
‘heaven! You know not from what misery you have al-
‘ready relieved’—‘Nor will I know more of it at this
‘time,’ interrupted my master, ‘than that which I too
‘plainly see. I will leave you now to your rest, and re-
‘turn as soon as it is day.’

‘Speak not of leaving us, sir,’ exclaimed the daughter,
who was afraid that if he should go away, he might not
return. ‘What rest can we take, in so short a time?
‘Leave us not, I beseech you: leave us not in this place!’
‘—Cease, my child!’ interposed the father, ‘nor press
‘your benefactor to continue in a scene of misery, that
‘must give pain to his humane heart.’—‘If my staying
‘will not give you pain,’ answered my master, ‘I will
‘most willingly stay; but it must be on condition that
‘our conversation points entirely forward to happier days.
‘There will be time enough hereafter to look back.’—

Saying this, he sat down on the bed side, (for other
seat the apartment afforded not) between the husband
and wife, with whom he spent the little remainder of the
night in such discourse as he thought most likely to di-
vert their attention from their present misery, and inspire
their minds with better hopes, while the children, all but
the daughter, who hung upon his words, comforted at
heart with a better meal than they had long tasted, fel

fast asleep, as they leaned their heads upon their mother's lap. As soon as it was day, 'Now, madam,' said my master, addressing himself to the mother, 'I will go and provide a place for your reception, as you say all places are alike to you. In the mean time, accept of this trifle,' giving her ten guineas, 'to provide such necessities as you may indispensibly want before you remove. When you are settled, we will see what further can be done. I shall be back with you within these three hours at most.'

For such beneficence there was no possibility of returning thanks; but their hearts spoke through their eyes, in a language sufficiently intelligible to his. Departing directly, to save both himself and them the pain of pursuing a conversation that grew too distressful, he went, without regard to change of dress, or appearance, to look for a proper lodging for them; where he laid in such provisions of every kind, as he knew they must immediately want. This care employed him till the time he had promised to return, when he found such an alteration in the looks and appearance of them all as gave his heart delight.

'You see, sir,' said the mother, as soon as he entered, 'the effects of your bounty; but do not think that vanity has made us abuse it. These clothes, what we could raise on which has, for some time, been our sole support, were the purchase of happier times; and were now *redeemed* for much less than we must have given for the worst we could buy.'—'Dear madam,' interrupted my master, taking her hand respectfully, 'mention not any thing of the kind to me, I beseech you. You will soon see such times again.'—Then turning to her husband—'I have taken a lodging, sir,' continued he; 'it is convenient, but not large, as I imagined would be your choice. I will call a coach, to take us to it directly. If there are any demands here, let the people of the house be called up, and they shall be paid. I will be your purse-bearer for the present.'—'No, sir,' replied the husband, 'there are not any. You have enabled us

‘ to discharge all demands upon us. People in our circumstances cannot find credit, because they want it.’

My master would then have gone for a coach, but the daughter insisted on saving him that trouble; upon which he put the whole family into it, and walked away before them to their new lodging. It is impossible to describe what these poor people felt, when they saw the provision he had made for their reception. The father, in particular, could not bear it, but sinking into a chair, ‘ This is too much!’ said he, as soon as a flood of tears had given vent to the fullness of his heart. ‘ This is too much. Support me, gracious heaven, who has sent this best of men to my relief; support me under the weight of obligations, which the preservation of these alone,’ looking round upon his wife and children, ‘ could induce me to accept.’—Then addressing himself to my master, ‘ My heart is not unthankful,’ continued he, ‘ but gratitude in such excess as mine, where there is no prospect of ever making a return, is the severest pain.’

My master, who sought none, attempted often to give the conversation another turn; but, finding that they could speak or think of nothing else as yet, he took his leave, promising to come the next day, when their minds should be better settled, to consult what more was in his power to serve them, having first privately taken an opportunity to slip a couple of guineas into the daughter’s hand, to avoid putting the delicacy of her father and mother to further pain.

CHAP. XLVIII.

Chrysal gives some account of his master. Reason of his having been bred to, and miscarried in a particular profession. Interesting remarks on the different kinds of merit necessary to eminence in different professions, confirmed by striking instances of their success in each. Natural consequence of his being forced into a profession against his inclination. He is compelled by distress to exert his abilities. Contradictions in his character, and the particular turn of his works accounted for. He visits his new family. Affecting story of an officer.

FATIGUED

FATIGUED in mind and body, from the debauch the evening before, and the height to which his tenderest passions had been wound up by such a moving scene, my master went directly home, and throwing himself on a bed, slept till next morning, without disturbance from pain or reflection. The contradictions which I had seen in his character prompted my curiosity to take this opportunity of looking back to his past life, to try if in the occurrences of that I could trace their cause. Born in the middle rank of life, his parents were induced by the dawnings of uncommon genius, which he discovered in his earliest youth, to give him such an education as might enable him to make that figure in some of the learned professions, for which paternal fondness flattered them, that nature had designed him. But, however greatly he profited by his education, the end proposed by it was far from being pleasing to his inclinations, which the vigour of his mind and body turned to more active scenes. For this reason, when he was to quit the pursuits of general learning for those of some particular profession, his ardour cooled, and he entirely lost that spirit of emulative ambition, which alone can enable a man to arrive at eminence. Such a falling-off could not escape the anxious observation of his friends, but as it was not in their power either to remedy it, or gratify his inclination in any other way, all they could do was, to enter him into the service of religion, a profession in which, though the greatest abilities and application of the human mind are evidently and indispensibly necessary, yet, by the perversion of man, the least are required.

You seem shocked at the severity of this remark; but a moment's reflection will open to you the reason upon which it is founded. In every other profession, success depends upon an opinion of that knowledge, which is called merit in it, because mankind see the necessity of such merit to attain the object of the profession. But in the church, the case is quite different. Every man thinks that he knows enough of religion to serve his own turn, and therefore gives himself no trouble about the knowledge

ledge of those who profess it, as he concludes that knowledge can be of no service to him ; and therefore success in the church depends not on a general opinion of merit, but on particular favour, which, for the reason given before, is not the necessary consequence of such merit. An attorney, or surgeon, for instance, who is not thought to have some merit in his profession, will never be employed ; but let him by any means get into the church, and curry favour with those in power, and he may rise to the first dignities of it, though he has no more merit in this profession, than he had in that which he was forced to quit for want of bread. And this is the reason why they who have least abilities for any profession are packed into this ; and why they, again, who have the least of these, are generally most successful in it ; as consciousness of their want of merit makes them take most pains to gain favour. The consequences of his entering into such a profession against inclination are obvious. An indignant sense of his own natural superiority to his superiors in station, made him fall into the too common error of arguing from the abuse, against the use, and hold in contempt not only them, but also the very profession itself, in which they could have such success, and in which necessity alone obliged him to continue. He disdained to apply abilities, which he thought above the end ! He neglected duties which he saw abused ; and at length sunk into a state of listless indifference, in which he would have died in obscurity, had not distress roused him, and extorted an exertion of his abilities, which a mind soured by disappointment of its earliest hopes, and by domestic unhappiness after, turned to satire, with an asperity and strength that made vice tremble in the bosom of the great, and folly hide her head in the highest places. As this domestic unhappiness was the immediate cause of those parts of his conduct which contradicted the general tenor of his character, justice requires that some account should be given of it. In the capricious levity of youth, he fixed his inclinations on a female, who had no other recommendation beside beauty. Pru-

dence would have forbidden a match, in which there was so little prospect of happiness, but men of great abilities too often think it beneath them to listen to her voice. He married her, though, in the phrase of the world, evidently to his ruin, the return she made him for which proof of his love, was, infidelity to his bed. This is the deepest wound that can be given to an heart of any delicacy ; it sharpens the sting of ingratitude with insult, by giving a preference that reflects dishonour. He felt it so severely, that despair made him strive to drown the sense of it in wine, in the intoxication of which, he too often was guilty of what, in a cooler moment, his reason would have blushed at, and his principles abhorred ; and this was the chief cause of that distress also, which, as I observed, forced him to exert his abilities, which he did with such success, as soon enabled him to quit a profession that had not been his choice, and at the same time indulge the natural disposition of his heart, by practising some of the sublimest duties of it.

As soon as he awoke next day, he went to visit his new family, where the happiness that glistened in every grateful eye, at his approach, made him happy. After some general chat, ‘ It is my duty, sir,’ said the father, ‘ to give
‘ you some account of myself, and of the cause of my
‘ falling into that depth of misery, from which your
‘ beneficence relieved me, that you should not think it
‘ has been lavished on objects altogether unworthy of it.
‘ I am descended from a good family, the fortune of
‘ which my father dissipated in supporting a parliamen-
‘ tary interest for the ministry, the only return he re-
‘ ceived for which, and for his voice upon all occasions,
‘ was a small pension for himself, and a pair of colours in
‘ the guards for me, his only son, with promises, indeed,
‘ of further provision, which were all forgotten when he
‘ died, happily for himself before the end of the parlia-
‘ ment, which, as he had no prospect of being returned
‘ again, would have left him at the mercy of creditors,
‘ whom it was not in his power to pay. Though I was
‘ soon sensible that my best hopes died with him, I was
‘ so

‘ so infatuated to a profession, the most pleasing to youth-
‘ ful idleness and vanity, that I laid out the little fortune
‘ of this best of women, whom I had married in my
‘ days of better hope, in the purchase of a company, in
‘ a marching regiment; at the head of which I flattered
‘ myself that I should meet some opportunity, in the war
‘ just then broke out, of meriting further promotion.
‘ But I found the vanity of such a thought when it was
‘ unhappily too late. After several years careful service,
‘ in the course of which I had sealed some degree of re-
‘ putation with my blood, in several warm actions, with-
‘ out advantage to myself, or prospect of any to my fa-
‘ mily, who now multiplied the cares of life ten thou-
‘ sand fold upon my head, I was driven by despair to ex-
‘ change my company, which I had bought, and there-
‘ fore could have sold again, the price of which would
‘ at least have kept us from absolute starving, for an higher
‘ rank in a younger regiment just then ordered on an ex-
‘ pedition, the object of which raised what was thought
‘ rational expectation of such profit as should ease me
‘ from the anxieties that made life a burthen. Allured
‘ solely by this expectation, I went accordingly. The
‘ expedition was successful. I did my duty. I was
‘ wounded in the course of it, to the extreme danger of
‘ my life. I entirely ruined my constitution by the se-
‘ verity of the climate; and on my return home was re-
‘ duced to half-pay, without receiving so much prize-
‘ money as defrayed the extraordinary expences of the ex-
‘ pedition, and of the illness which I contracted in it;
‘ while those above me accumulated such wealth, as, if
‘ divided in any degree of proportion, would have re-
‘ compensated the labours of us, who had literally borne
‘ the heat and burthen of the day, and were now pining
‘ in discontent and misery, aggravated by a partiality
‘ so severely injurious. In this situation, I resolved to
‘ throw myself at the feet of my sovereign, and implore
‘ relief from the known goodness of his heart. But his
‘ throne was surrounded by those, whose interest it was to
‘ keep

‘ keep the cries of his people from coming to his ears * ;
 ‘ and therefore, as it was necessary for me to make my
 ‘ errand known, I never could obtain access to him.

‘ The distress of this disappointment was still further
 ‘ heightened by the delays in the discharge of that half-
 ‘ pay, which was now my only support; and the draw-
 ‘ backs it was subject to from the *fees of office*, even
 ‘ when it should come to be paid, which were such, that
 ‘ when I attempted to mortgage it, the wretch’s last re-
 ‘ source, to put off starving as long as he can, what I
 ‘ could get from those *vultures*, who fatten upon the
 ‘ sufferings of a soldier, was scarce sufficient to satisfy
 ‘ our present wants. How, then, could I look forward
 ‘ for a family, dearer to me than life? What could sup-
 ‘ port resolution, when hope was gone? Mine was un-
 ‘ equal to the trial; and I was beginning to meditate on
 ‘ putting an end to a life of such misery, without con-
 ‘ sidering that the sufferings of those, for whom I felt
 ‘ so much more than for myself, must be still made hea-
 ‘ vier by such a base desertion of them, when heaven, in
 ‘ its mercy, visited my family with a violent fever, which
 ‘ freed me from further fears for the future welfare of my
 ‘ three eldest sons, and with difficulty spared the two,
 ‘ whom you see before you. Oh! my poor boys! happy!
 ‘ thrice happier than us, whom you left behind! Excuse
 ‘ this weakness, sir! nature will force the involuntary
 ‘ tear, in spite of reason; for were they not the children
 ‘ of my love? During their illness, I lost every other
 ‘ care in my attendance upon them; nor omitted any
 ‘ possible means to preserve lives, for which my fears
 ‘ foreboded nothing but unhappiness; but, though their
 ‘ deaths freed me from a part of those fears, they left a
 ‘ melancholy void in my heart, which was more painful,
 ‘ if possible, than any fear. But I was not long sensible
 ‘ of that pain. My children were scarce laid in the grave,
 ‘ when the fever seized myself with such violence, that I
 ‘ soon lost my senses, nor recovered them for above a

* This reflection, *notoriously so groundless*, is alone sufficient to
 vindicate the author from any allusion to present times.

‘ month;

‘ month ; and then only to feel the greatest wretchedness,
‘ that was ever heaped upon human creature.

‘ The expence of my children’s and my own illness had
‘ not only exhausted all the money I had raised on the
‘ anticipation of my half-pay, but also obliged my wife
‘ to mortgage several of our best effects. Such a resource
‘ never escapes the watchful eyes of people who keep
‘ lodging-houses. Our landlady no sooner perceived it,
‘ than she seized upon the rest, and then turned us out,
‘ the moment I could be removed without instant death.

‘ In this situation, I must have perished in the street,
‘ had not a poor woman, whom my wife had been obliged
‘ to call in to her assistance when I sickened, shared with
‘ us her habitation, in which you found us, as she also
‘ did the earnings of her daily labour, till a chairman,
‘ who was carrying a beau to a ball, threw her down
‘ with such violence, for not making haste enough out of
‘ his way, that she broke her leg, and was obliged to
‘ be taken to an hospital. From that time we supported
‘ life by mortgaging the few clothes we had brought
‘ upon our backs, without one ray of hope to tempt us
‘ to look forward, till they also were all gone, and the
‘ misery of cold added to that of hunger. In this con-
‘ dition we had been two days without tasting bread, or
‘ feeling the warmth of fire, calling incessantly upon
‘ death to put that end to our distresses, which a sense of
‘ religion, made stronger by my wretchedness, now pre-
‘ vented my daring to hasten, when my daughter stole
‘ out unknown to us, to seek for charity in the streets,
‘ where she wandered, without meeting any thing but
‘ insults, and solicitations to vice, till heaven directed
‘ your steps to her. Such was the reward of more than
‘ twenty years faithful and hard service, in which I had
‘ fought the battles of my country, in the opposite ex-
‘ tremities of the globe, with honour, and been instru-
‘ mental in making princely fortunes for the several com-
‘ manders under whom I served. This, sir, is the sum
‘ of my story, in which I have been as brief as I could,
‘ to avoid giving you pain. We are now your creatures.

‘ The

‘The lives we enjoy are immediately the gift of your benevolence—a benevolence so critically timed (for we could not have subsisted many hours longer without it) as to raise a hope, that providence, which sent you to our relief, will not leave its work unfinished, but save us from falling again into such misery, by means agreeable to its own wisdom and goodness, though impossible for us, in our present situation, to foresee.’

It was some time before my master, who had listened to the officer’s story with sympathetic attention, was able to speak. Recovering himself at length, ‘Fear not,’ said he, in a broken voice, ‘never were the righteous forsaken; nor—nor——nor—. I have some friends, sir, who may serve!—In the mean time take this,’ reaching him a bank-note for twenty pounds, ‘I will not be refused! business calls me for a few hours; but I will see you again in the evening.’—Saying this, he hurried away, to hide his emotions, without waiting for a reply, which, indeed, their gratitude left them not the power to make.

CHAP. XLIX.

Chrysal’s master carries him to visit an old acquaintance, who behaves in character, on hearing the officer’s story, and surprises Chrysal’s master with an account of his having turned patriot. The general motives for such a step; with some remarks on the difference between practice and profession, in different instances. Insignificance of private characters in attacks upon a ministry, and why. Reflections on the origin and use of satire, and the abuse of the terms good and ill-nature, with the reasons why so many cry out against satire. Chrysal changes his service, in a common way.

THE most intimate acquaintance my master had, was the person who had been competitor with a former master of mine, for admission in the higher order of the mock-monastery. To him he went directly, and relating the officer’s story, while it was still warm on his heart, asked his assistance to do something more effectual for his relief.

His

His friend was so affected with the melancholy tale, that it was some time before he could speak; but when at length he did, it was in a strain very different from what might have been expected. ‘And the girl was really so pretty!’ said he, with a look of inexpressible archness. ‘Well said, my good Levite. I presume you satisfied your own appetites with her at a tavern, before you provided for those of her family; though you sunk that part of the story, for fear I should want to come in for a snack with you. The concupiscence of you parsons is truly catholic, whatever your consciences may be, and would engross the whole sex, if it was not restrained; not indeed that women come within the meaning of the *mortmain* acts; as none do more good in their generation, and consequently are better represented to the state, than those who are occupied by the clergy.’—‘Why, what a sensual brute you must be,’ answered my master, ‘to talk of satisfying appetites with a wretch just perishing with cold and hunger. But it is all affectation. If you had been in my place, you would have acted just as I did; for, whatever airs your wicked wit may assume, I know your heart is strongly susceptible of charity.’—‘Charity! Ha! ha! ha! I expected that. It is always the burthen of a parson’s song. They make a cloak of it upon all occasions; and, indeed, if it will really cover sins, as they say, they are in the right to have it ready, for multitudes enough they have, to take up every corner of it. But, why can you not throw off the *cant* along with the *cloth*? However, that her hunger should not damp your desires any more, here,’ giving him half a dozen guineas, ‘is my help to allay it.’—‘I will not refuse your money, for your own sake, in hopes that your bestowing even this much so well may help to atone for some of the many thousands you have thrown away. But it was not with any view of getting it that I spoke to you.—Their immediate necessities are supplied. I want your assistance and interest.’—‘My interest! Ha! ha! ha! You apply to a person of great interest, truly. Why, my

‘ my very naming them would be sufficient to ruin their
‘ hopes for ever. You don’t know, perhaps, that I have
‘ turned patriot, and attacked the ministry.’

‘ Patriot ! for heaven’s sake how long, and on what
‘ occasion have you taken this strange whim ?’—‘ Whim !
‘ Pray, good sir, speak with more respect of the noblest
‘ principle of the human heart. The thought came into
‘ my head the night before last ; and as I do not love to
‘ lose time, especially in things of such moment, I gave
‘ it vent yesterday, in the shape of a political pamphlet,
‘ in which I have proved to a demonstration, that the
‘ minister and all his friends and countrymen are fools and
‘ rogues, and deserve to be hanged.’—‘ Is it possible that
‘ you can be serious ! What, in the name of common
‘ sense, could be your motive for taking such a step as
‘ this ? I thought you had expectations of favour from
‘ them.’—‘ What motives should any man of honour and
‘ honesty have, but the good of his country ; their neg-
‘ lect of which has roused an indignation that will make
‘ them tremble.’—‘ Or, in other words, they have disap-
‘ pointed your expectations, and, therefore, you take this
‘ method of being revenged on them, and extorting, for
‘ fear, what they would not do from favour ; the general
‘ motive of modern patriots, I acknowledge ; but with
‘ what face can you pretend to the title, prostituted as it
‘ is, I cannot think, as your very name is a burlesque upon
‘ every thing that is serious.’

‘ Pray, how so, reverend and grave sir ? If the most
‘ profligate sinner makes the best saint, as you say, why
‘ should not a moderate rake make a tolerable politician ?
‘ I believe you will hardly attribute it to the superior ex-
‘ cellence of the latter character ? but the truth is, though
‘ it is impossible for me to profess political principles more
‘ contrary to my practice, than your moral practice is to
‘ your preaching, yet you would deny me the toleration
‘ which you avail yourself of, and have my words judged
‘ from my actions ; not my actions from my words, as
‘ you expect your own shall be. But my private cha-
‘ racter or practice signifies nothing to this undertaking,
‘ which

‘ which is to rip up the practices and characters, public
‘ and private, of a set of people who have obtruded them-
‘ selves into a station that exposes them to envy, and every
‘ accusation against whom will, therefore, be received im-
‘ plicitly, without regarding who or what the author of
‘ it is. Not but there is sufficient room to attack these,
‘ whose whole private lives have been such a continual
‘ series of vice and folly, and their public conduct of blun-
‘ ders and villany, that it is impossible to say or think
‘ any thing bad enough of them, as I have already prov-
‘ ed by incontestible instances in my pamphlet, and shall
‘ by many more in the course of the undertaking. If
‘ the tables, indeed, should turn, and I get into their
‘ place, then they may make the same use of my charac-
‘ ter, and perhaps not without effect; but at present it is
‘ quite out of the question. And now that I have open-
‘ ed myself to you, I expect your assistance, in return for
‘ my confidence.’

‘ Assistance in politics! It is not in my power to give
‘ you any. I hate, from my soul, every political system
‘ under the sun, as a jumble of folly and villany (I mean
‘ as they are carried into practice, not in their speculative
‘ plans) and therefore never could throw away a thought
‘ upon them.’—‘ That signifies nothing. The assistance
‘ which I want, you are well qualified to give. While I
‘ detect their political blunders and villany, you shall lash
‘ their private vices and follies, till we make them equally
‘ ridiculous and odious to every man of sense and virtue
‘ in the nation; a task that will give you the pleasing op-
‘ portunity of indulging that misanthropy, which inspires
‘ the muse of a satirist, and is mistaken for virtue, be-
‘ cause it rails against vice; for, blazon it out as pom-
‘ poufly as you will, nothing but ill-nature can make a
‘ man take delight in exposing the defects of others; and
‘ the more forcibly he does it, the more powerful must
‘ that principle be with him. And by the same rule, it
‘ is good-nature that makes a man fawn upon folly, and
‘ flatter vice; and consequently, whoever does it, is vir-
‘ tuous.’—‘ A most judicious way of reasoning, truly:

‘ now, on the contrary, I think it a much more just conclusion, that they who treat vice with tenderness approve in their hearts, and would practice it if they could ; and that they who expose its deformities and dangers really detest it, though they may sometimes, through human weakness, fall into the practice. But I do not wonder at your remark ; it is an old and common one. All who are conscious that they deserve the lash desire to lessen its force ; and therefore derive satire from ill-nature, in order to obviate the application of it to the proper object ; and fasten upon the satirist the fault, which is in themselves. And this abuse of the terms good and ill-nature is the reason why some have been provoked to call the former folly. But, not to waste time in discussions, where prejudice only can find a doubt, I agree to your proposal with pleasure, and will hold folly up to ridicule, and brand vice for detestation, wherever you point them out to me, without regard to the rank or power of the person ; or to any imputations of misanthropy, and ill-nature, which may be levelled at myself, to shield against, and blunt the edge of my satire ; though I no more expect that I shall be able to reform the moral, than you the political conduct of the age. However, it is a duty to make the attempt, be the success what it will. But, by the bye, are you not apprehensive that your undertaking may be attended with danger ? The people in power will certainly be provoked ; and power, you know, has long arms, and will often reach over the fences of the law.’

‘ I fear them not ! I have friends who are able, and will defend the laws in me, while I keep within their fence ; one of the principal of whom, I expect every minute to call upon me, to communicate matter, and consult upon another stroke.’—‘ Then I’ll take my leave. You’ll have things to talk about which you will not desire me to hear. Conspirators against the state always choose privacy.’—‘ Conspirators against the state ! Our conspiracy, if such you call it, is for the state, against its worst enemies, traitors to the trust reposed in them,

‘ them, and fools to their own true interest, as members of
 ‘ the community.’—‘ All this I’ll grant; and yet it is
 ‘ well if they do not find means to make themselves pass
 ‘ for the state, and of course, you for the traitors against
 ‘ it. They who have the power, can easily assume the
 ‘ name.’—As he said this, a servant brought his friend
 a note, who, upon casting his eye over it, ‘ The gentle-
 ‘ man I expected,’ said he, ‘ writes me word, that he is not
 ‘ very well this morning, and, therefore, desires to see me
 ‘ at his house. If you are going my way, I’ll set you
 ‘ down.’—‘ I thank you!’ answered my master. ‘ But
 ‘ ambition does not rise so high as that yet. I do not
 ‘ aspire to a pillory, or prison, even in the cause of my
 ‘ country. Shall we see you at dinner?’—‘ Most certainly!
 ‘ but hold. Can you give me change for this note? I have
 ‘ not time to call upon my banker.’—‘ I believe I can;
 ‘ but then it must be with the help of what you have your-
 ‘ self given me for the officer; like other bankers, who
 ‘ make a parade of taking in charitable subscriptions, at
 ‘ the same time that they support their credit with the
 ‘ money.’—‘ That’s right! I’ll mention him to the per-
 ‘ son I am going to. He has abilities to serve him effec-
 ‘ tually; and I am satisfied never wants inclination to do
 ‘ a generous action.’—My master then gave him the
 change of his note, among which I was, and took his
 leave.

CHAP. L.

*Chrysal sums up the character of his late master. Dif-
 ferent opinions for and against the propriety and benefit of
 satire. The former supported by good authority. Reason of
 some inconveniences attending the indulgence of such a turn.
 Character of Chrysal’s new master concluded from a former
 sketch. He waits upon his patron. Character of him, with
 his motives for such a patronage. He gives striking reasons
 for objecting to some parts of Chrysal’s master’s pamphlet,
 which the other makes some weak attempts to vindicate.
 Chrysal’s master enjoys the pleasure of tracing his own fame.*

THE peculiar character of my late master made me
 feel regret at leaving his service, till I should see

more of him. His abilities did honour to the age and country in which he lived ; and the exalted sentiments of virtue, which broke from him spontaneously, in the genuine effusions of his soul, gave sufficient reason to judge, that his conduct would be entirely ruled by it, and his talents exerted in the more pleasing and extensive way of recommending it to imitation by displaying all its advantages and charms, as soon as time should cool the fervour of his passions, and apply its lenient balsam to the sores in his heart, the smart of which first gave him that poignant turn, and drove him for relief to excesses that too often drowned his better reason, and led him into actions, which in a cooler moment he abhorred. In a word, his failings were the luxuriance of nature, as his virtues were her perfection. As I have said that he turned his poetical vein particularly to satire, I see your curiosity to know my opinion of the propriety and benefit of that manner of applying the powers of wit. But I have often told you, that I am not permitted to determine controverted points. Many, with a plausible appearance of good nature decry it, as proceeding from a malevolence of disposition, and tending only to spread the influence of bad example, by making it known, and harden people in vices they might forsake if not made desperate by detection ! Many with an appearance of virtuous indignation, vindicate it, as terrifying from vice, by showing it in its native deformity, and correcting folly, by putting it out of countenance ; which latter opinion is supported by the authority of one of the most sensible, and best men of his age.* But still the indulgence of this turn is attended with many inconveniencies and dangers, if it be not guided with the greatest care. That imaginary superiority, which the power of making another ridiculous or detested

* Would the anachronism admit the supposition, the editor should imagine that the author here meant the writer of *Letters from a Persian in England*, &c. whose words are these, ‘ If all the edge of wit is turned on those who are justly the objects of ridicule, wit is as great a benefit to *private life*, as the sword of the magistrate is to *public*.’ -- Letter 40. flatters

flatters a man with, is so pleasing to the self-love inseparable from human nature, that it requires uncommon moderation to refrain from exercising it upon improper occasions, and makes him presumptuously conclude, that whatever happens to displease himself in any particular is a just object of public ridicule and censure. An error, into which the impetuosity of my late master sometimes hurried him.

I have given you a sketch of the character of my new master upon a former occasion†; to which I have only to add here, that a wanton abuse of uncommon abilities inverted the end for which they were given, making them disgraceful to himself and dangerous to his country, a licentious pursuit of every thing called pleasure having wasted his fortune, and driven him to the despicable necessity of prostituting them to any purpose that might promise to retrieve his affairs. The gentleman whom he went to wait upon, the morning I came into his possession, was one who had served his king and country with fidelity and success, while he was permitted to follow the dictates of his own reason in their service; but gave up the empty and disgraceful appearance of acting in it any longer, on finding his judgement disregarded, and himself designed to be made only a cypher, to increase the consequence of another. The indignation, however, which had prompted him to take this step, led him not into those unjustifiable lengths which are too common on such occasions. He was faithful to his sovereign, though he had lost his favour; and watched attentively over the interests of his country, though he was not permitted to promote them. The only instance in which his conduct could possibly be censured was his patronizing such a man as my master. But it is a maxim in human politics, that the end justifies the means, be they what they will. He wanted to be restored to his former power; and thought this man's exposing the insufficiency of those who had supplanted him in it, the most likely way to effect that purpose. To this desire of power he was not stimulated by the usual methods of re-

pairing a ruined fortune, or making a new family. His wealth exceeded his very wishes; and he already enjoyed the highest honours he could aspire to: all he proposed was the glory of his sovereign, and the advantages of his country, which that enthusiastic ambition, from whence proceed the greatest actions, made him think himself the most capable, and wish to be the happy instrument of promoting.

By this gentleman my master was received with that civility which is commonly mistaken for esteem. After some general chat, on the occurrences and humour of the times, in which my master modestly took to himself the merit of the people's discontent at the ministry and their measures, as raised solely by his pamphlet, 'I allow the good effects of it,' said the gentleman, 'and greatly approve the principles upon which it is written; but I much fear that your zeal has transported you too far. You should of all things have avoided involving the master in your charge against the ministers; because that alone can give them any advantage against you, and is therefore what they always feign, however unjustly, when they are attacked, in order to screen themselves behind him. Besides, the character of a sovereign is sacred, and should never be treated but with the highest respect, especially when the virtues of the man are such as would be respectable in any character.'

Such disapprobation from his principal patron greatly disappointed my master, who was so little acquainted with his sentiments, as to think he bore resentment against his sovereign for the loss of his favour, as well as against those who had deprived him of it, and consequently would be pleased with any thing that might seem to reflect disgrace upon him. Recovering himself, however, before his embarrassment was perceived, 'I imagined,' answered he, with his usual presence of mind, 'that it was impossible to accuse me of disrespect to one, whom I have studiously sought every occasion of praising. As for what you take notice of, my charge is not personally against him, but through him, against those who had

‘ had the baseness and insolence to abuse his goodness and
‘ confidence in such a manner ; so that I think it is im-
‘ possible to wrest it to the purpose you apprehend.’—‘ I
‘ wish you may not be mistaken ; but I much fear that
‘ your argument will not have the weight you expect.
‘ Praise, given with an air of irony, is the keenest in-
‘ sult ; besides, in this particular case, the praises you be-
‘ stow upon his goodness are all at the expence of his un-
‘ derstanding. However, do not be dispirited at what
‘ cannot now be helped. As I think your intention was
‘ not in fault, you may depend upon my countenance and
‘ support, let what will happen.’ This comfortable as-
surance restored my master to his former spirits : not de-
siring, however, to continue the conversation any longer
upon that subject, ‘ I have this morning,’ said he, ‘ made
‘ no inconsiderable addition to our force. My friend,
‘ the poet, whose turn for satire I have heard you so
‘ much admire, has promised me to exert all his powers
‘ in our cause. He will attack the faults in their private,
‘ while I expose their public characters, and experience
‘ has shown that it is easy to overcome the minister, when
‘ the man is made ridiculous or odious.’—‘ The former I’ll
‘ grant you ; but we have too many instances in contra-
‘ diction to the latter, to build much upon it. Howe-
‘ ver, his powers are great, and may do much, if he will
‘ take care to avoid the rock upon which you have fal-
‘ len ; and, therefore, I shall be glad to attach him seri-
‘ ously to us, especially as he does not seem to be utterly
‘ void of virtue, notwithstanding the libertinism of his
‘ conduct in some instances.’

My master would not miss so favourable an opportunity of
doing justice to the character of his friend. According-
ly, he related the story of the distresses of the officer and
his family, and his generosity to them, in so affecting a
manner, that the gentleman directly gave him a consider-
able sum of money, for their present relief, with a pro-
mise of providing for them himself, if he could not pre-
vail upon those in power to do it. Pleased with a suc-
cess which he knew would be so pleasing to his friend, my
master

master took leave of his patron, and set out to trace his own fame from one coffee-house to another, and enjoy the applauses which the popularity and boldness of his attempt procured him from the multitude, wherever he went; after which he repaired to his usual haunt, where he dined, and spent the evening in the usual manner.

CHAP. LI.

Chrysal's master receives an unwelcome visit, at an unseasonable time. His extraordinary behaviour before his superiors. He is sent to prison. Chrysal makes some unpopular remarks on certain interesting subjects. Consequences of his master's imprisonment, with an account of his behaviour in it.

CONFIDENT as my master was of his safety, he soon found that the fears of his patron were too just. He had scarce laid him down to sleep, when his bed was surrounded, and himself made a prisoner by a number of fellows, who, under the sanction of authority, committed all the outrages of lawless ruffians, breaking open his locks, rifling his effects, and searching into all his secrets. It was in vain for him to expostulate with such people against so flagrant injustice, or claim the protection of the laws. They derided him, and all he could say; and having finished their work, dragged him away, with insults and abuse, to a magistrate, where he had the comfort of waiting a considerable time in such agreeable company, before his worship was at leisure to see him. But this, though designed as an indignity, was of real advantage to him, as it gave him time to recover his spirits, and collect presence of mind for an interview of such importance. Accordingly, when at length he was admitted to the dread tribunal, instead of shewing any dejection at the danger which seemed to hang over him, he behaved in a manner worthy of a better man, and a better cause. He asserted the violation of the laws in his person with so much resolution, and appearance of reason, and returned the insolence of office with such contempt, answering illusively to the insidious questions put to him, and boldly demanding that right of being restored

restored to his liberty, which was assured to every individual of the community by the essential principles of the constitution, that his judges were startled, and more than once wished they had left him unmolested.

However, as there was no receding now, they concluded it to be their best way to go through with what they had begun, and bear down opposition with a high hand; with which intent they sent him directly to prison, in defiance of all he could say, where he was treated with uncommon severity, and the method which the law provided for his being restored to liberty eluded as long as possible, by finesses which power only could support.

I see your indignation at such an infringement of laws procured by the blood of myriads, and established by the most solemn engagements human and divine, for the security of the common rights of mankind. The part which every man feels in such sufferings, on a supposition that they may possibly one day fall upon himself, naturally interests you, as it did the multitude, in my master's cause. But when you come to examine coolly the manner of his being taken into confinement, which is what gives you such offence, it will not appear so contrary to reason and justice, the foundation, and, as I may say, soul of all laws, as popular opinion may presume.

All power is delegated from the people for the mutual advantage of governors and governed. To support the use, and prevent the abuse of that power, laws are established by the consent of both, which are to be the rule of their actions. But, as it is impossible for human wisdom to foresee, and provide for every occurrence that may happen, there is essentially implied in the first trust a further power of applying unprovided remedies to unforeseen cases, for the safety and advantage of the whole. If it be objected, that these remedies may sometimes be injurious to individuals, by being injudiciously or wrongfully applied, the answer is obvious. The sufferings of a few are not to be set in competition with the safety of the many. Beside, if the remedies were never to be applied,

plied, where there was a possibility of a mistake, the evil might happen, in the time necessary for inquiry and deliberation. For, though penal laws are designed only to prevent *future* by the punishment of *past* crimes; yet where such crimes, if committed, will exceed the reach of punishment, and defeat the laws, the power of prevention must be exerted earlier, to anticipate them before commission.

Without such power, the trust of government would be imperfect, and inadequate to the end; as, if no punishment could be inflicted thus for prevention, but by prescribed forms, human ingenuity, ever most fertile in evil, would devise expedients to evade it, till perpetration should secure impunity, as I said before, perhaps to the ruin of the state. For these reasons, an extraordinary power must have been implicitly given, for extraordinary cases, or the good of the community, which is the end of government, cannot be obtained. If this power, though, should be abused, the sacred spirit of the laws of your happy country will supply the inevitable defect of the latter, and grant redress to the sufferer, when a proper time comes for inquiring into the circumstances of the case; a redress which was not provided by the people* the most jealous of their liberties of any who ever united themselves into civil society, who, sensible of the necessity of such a resource, made it a fundamental rule of their government, on any occasions of uncommon difficulty or danger, to entrust the whole power into the hands of some one person, whom they called DICTATOR, *as his word was to be the law*, without subjecting him to control in the use, or account for the abuse of it, when his power should be at an end.

As soon as my master's imprisonment was known, the populace all took fire. They made his cause their own. They looked upon him as a martyr in the darling cause of liberty. They insulted all government, and committed excesses every hour, infinitely more illegal, and dangerous to liberty, than that of which they com-

* The Romans.

plained

plained. In the mean time, his confinement was far from sitting so heavy upon him as might have been expected. Though he wanted the approbation of his own mind, and the enthusiasm of the principles he professed to support his resolution, and encourage him to look forward with hope, levity of temper supplied the place of that resolution, and saved him from sinking under misfortunes, by making him insensible of their weight. He rallied his jailors, mimicked his judges, cracked jests upon his own undoing, and turned every circumstance into ridicule, with such drollery and unconcern, as if he was acting the imaginary sufferings of another, not actually suffering himself. How long he would have been able to support that spirit though came not to be tried.

CHAP. LII.

Chrysal's master is visited in prison by his patron; and from what motives. His conduct, on being set at liberty, and the consequences of it. Remarkable grounds on which he was set at liberty, with a conjecture at the reason of fixing upon them. Chrysal makes an inquiry into certain matters much talked of, and little understood.

AS soon as his friends obtained access to him (for the great severity of his confinement was the uncommon strictness of it) his patron went to see him. As I have taken notice of his disapprobation of what had brought my master into this scrape, you are surpris'd at his taking a step that seemed so inconsistent with his character. But his motives for it did honour to the man, however strange they may appear in the politician. He had admitted him to a degree of personal intimacy. He had approved of his engaging in a cause, to which he was himself attached most sanguinely, and he scorned to desert him in distress, occasioned by what he thought an error of his judgment, not a fault of his intention. Beside the consolation to himself, the honour of such a visit was of the greatest advantage to my master's affairs; as it lightened the personal prejudices against him, and gave a good opinion of a cause, which appeared to have the countenance of such a man. Intoxicated with the popularity he had thus acquired,

quired, which if rightly managed might have done great matters, he was no sooner at liberty, than he threw off all restraint, and ran into such licentiousness, as in a short time lessened its force, and lost him every trace of the good opinion of all who gave themselves time to think of the causes and consequences of such conduct. But his triumph was not long lived. He had been restored to his liberty, not as a right common to all the members of the community, on a supposition of the illegality of the manner in which he had been deprived of it ; but in consequence of certain immunities, annexed to a particular part of the legislature, to which he belonged. Though the abilities and integrity of the magistrate who made this distinction were unquestionable, some persons, who looked farther than the present moment, imagined they could trace it to a cause not commonly attended to. He had on former occasions been instrumental in depriving some people of liberty in the same manner ; to have condemned that manner therefore now, as illegal, would have been condemning himself ; at the same time, that upright obedience to the dictates of his present opinion obliged him to set him free. Such a difficulty must have been distressing ; but this distinction delivered him from it, and enabled him to save his credit, and conscience both ; as those people had borne no part in the legislature, and therefore had not been entitled to such immunity.

I see your indignation arise at the thought, that in a country which boasts of being governed by equal laws, any one set of men should enjoy immunities denied to the rest ; but that indignation proceeds from viewing the matter in a partial light. In the country where your lot has happily fallen, the end of government is better secured by a division of its powers, than in any other under heaven. The great wisdom of those who made this division appears in the provisions made to preserve each part in it independent of the rest, the only means by which the division itself could be preserved. Now, as the executive power necessary belongs solely to the prince, it was equally necessary to secure those who bore a part with him in the
legislative

legislative from any undue exertion of that power, which might be attempted in order to break through that independence, and join the legislative to the executive; or, in other words, vest both powers absolutely, and without limitation, in the prince. And this was the reason of immunities so much talked of, and so little understood.

If it be said, that these immunities operate also against fellow-subjects, from whom there can be no fear, and are sometimes (perhaps too often) abused to dishonest ends, the answer must be sought for in the depravity of the human heart, which will pervert the best institutions to the worst purposes, and makes it necessary to preclude every exception, that it should not be extended to serve them. As for instance, if the meanest subject of the state had a right to claim the assistance of the civil power in every case against any member of the legislature, while in his legislative capacity, that right might be suborned, or feigned, by the executive power in such a manner, as to overturn his independency, and to prevent his discharging the trust committed to him: for which reason it is better that an individual should suffer (to suppose the worst) than an opportunity be given for ruining the whole community; according to the known maxim, that an evil, which affects but one, is preferable to an inconvenience which affects many. And this immunity, which is really the shield and safety of the state, can never be invaded, but from a design against the liberty of the state, nor absolutely given up without giving up that liberty along with it; though the right may be waved in particular instances, which appear unworthy of the benefit of it. To actions, criminal in their own nature, between individuals, or immediately dangerous to the state, it was never designed to be extended, as in such cases it would have been destructive of the end for which it was instituted. While my master was running riot in this extravagant manner, some things happened which raised in his favour the indignation and pity of many, who disliked the man, and disapproved of his proceedings, because they saw him persecuted by unjustifiable means. It may be imagined,

gined, that I did not remain long enough in his possession to see the conclusion of this affair; but, as I had ample opportunity of being acquainted with it at the time, and see that your curiosity is interested in the event, I will continue the account here, especially as the principal occurrences in my next service were connected with it in so particular a manner, that it is necessary to explain one, in order to understand the other.

CHAP. LIII.

Chrysal's master takes a foreign tour. Remarks upon national reflections, and attacks upon private characters. Chrysal's master is called to an account for certain improper liberties, by a very improper person, whom he treats with uncommon propriety. Chrysal makes some out-of-the-way reflections on a question much canvassed to little purpose.

WHEN my master had in some measure exhausted the first flow of his spirits upon the recovery of his liberty, he made a short excursion abroad, as if merely for amusement, but in reality to provide a place of retreat, in case of the worst, as his apprehensions could not but be alarmed, whenever he allowed himself time to think.

I have observed, that in the account he gave my late master, when he first told him of his attack upon the minister, he said he had included in it all his countrymen. This he really had done on that, and continued to do on all other occasions, with a licentiousness unexampled; but which lost its force, and became contemptible, by sinking into scurrility. Attacks upon private characters, unless forced by necessity, or designed to serve good purposes, such as personal reformation, or caution to others, are literally abuse, and proceed always from a bad heart; but national reflections, as they can answer no good purpose of any kind, are abuse in every sense, and proceed equally from folly and malevolence. A folly, indeed, that is often punished by fools, who take to themselves that abuse, which belongs not to them in particular, and would pass by, without lighting upon them, if not applied thus by themselves.

My master had not been long abroad, when a countryman

man of the minister's thought proper to call him to account for the liberties he had taken with his country.—The absurdity of such a step in any man was still aggravated by the peculiar circumstances of this person, who had actually given weight to the severest part of the charge against his country (indeed, the only part that would admit of weight, the rest being, as I have said, nothing but scurrility) by engaging in the service of the enemies of its present government, and fighting their battles against it. Such an antagonist, therefore, was beneath the notice of any man of reason, and accordingly was treated so by my master, who on this occasion behaved with a moral propriety and prudence much above the tenor of his general character. But his enemies beheld his conduct in a different light, and attributed to cowardice what was really the effect of courage.

You seem surprised at my saying that his declining to fight was the effect of courage: but, reflect a moment, and you will see that it is the motive of fighting, and not the mere fighting, that constitutes true courage; and that the fashionable courage of venturing life for punctilios of imaginary honour is real cowardice, as it proceeds solely from fear of the false censure of the world; and therefore, that to brave that censure in such cases is the highest courage. I would not be understood by this, to declare absolutely against a man's fighting in his own cause, in all cases indiscriminately. Different circumstances make an essential difference in things which superficially appear to be alike. A man's venturing his life, as I have said, in vindicating empty punctilios of imaginary honour, or in support of injustice, is the highest and most ungrateful insult to the author of that life, who has made the preservation of it the first principle of action, and consequently an indispensable duty, when it can be preserved without violation of those greater duties which he has thought proper to prescribe.

But, as there are other things more valuable than life, because without them life would lose its value, reason, which is the voice of heaven, permits to hazard the lesser

good for the preservation of the greater, and this is the justification of war between different states. To prevent the evils, which such a recourse between individuals in the same state, must be attended with, laws are established to preserve those rights, and redress injuries which they may offer to each other; to these laws, therefore, it is an indispensable duty to recur for such redress and preservation, where they are able to effect them: but this duty does not seem to extend so far as absolutely and indiscriminately to preclude the other method of a man's striving at the hazard of his life to effect them himself, when the laws cannot do it, as is too often the case, it being impossible for human wisdom to make provision for every occurrence, which in the complication and extensiveness of human action may require it. An opinion so contrary to that professed by all who have undertaken to discuss this subject, however consonant to the sense of mankind in general, as shewn in their practice, should be supported by the plainest and most convincing reasons.

A good name is the immediate jewel of the soul; it is the first fruit, and the reward of virtue: the preservation of it, therefore, is indisputably worth hazarding life for, where the laws have not sufficiently provided for its defence; as is the case, in many of the most delicate and tender points. If a man, for instance, is unjustly accused of a fact that ruins his good name, at the same time, that the accusation comes not within the reach of any law, from which he may receive redress, can reason say, that he is not justifiable in striving for that redress himself, and vindicating his good name, at the hazard of his life when that life would be only misery without it? But here another difficulty occurs. Shall a man, it is said, put himself upon a level with his injurer, and risk a second injury, in seeking satisfaction for the first? This certainly is an evil, but must be submitted to, to prevent a greater.

If a man were permitted to redress himself absolutely, without such a risk, the consequence should be, that partiality to himself would make him think every thing that should displease him an injury sufficient to merit such a redress,

redress, whereby murders would be multiplied to the reproach of humanity, and ruin of the state. But where this risk makes the redress attended with danger, people are cautious not to run into it, but on what they at least think good grounds. Besides, risking life in an even scale is in some manner staking it upon the justice of the cause, and appealing to heaven for decision; and consequently success clears the character in general estimation; whereas killing insidiously, or without such equal risk, only confirms the first charge, on a presumption of consciousness, and aggravates it with the weight of new guilt. And this was the sense of mankind, till the remedy was perverted to such an excess, as to become worse than the evil, and therefore necessary to be abolished, as far as human laws can abolish a general principle of action.

One particular, though, in the laws made to abolish it deserves remark, as it shows a striking instance of the sagacity with which human laws are often made. Killing a man in a deliberate duel, be the cause ever so important, and utterly unprovided for in the law, is accounted *murder*, and made capitally criminal; but killing in a drunken broil, or ungoverned gust of passion is only a pardonable offence, and called by the softer name of *manslaughter*! Now, if the makers of that law had but considered which action proceeded from the worst cause, and was liable to be attended with the worst consequences, from the possible frequency of it, they might perhaps have seen reason to reverse the case, and made the *latter* capital, and the *former* at least pardonable. In a word, he who takes away the life of another, or loses his own, in a trivial or unjust cause, or where the laws of his country have provided him redress, is guilty of murder; whereas, he who kills, or is killed, in a cause of real importance, for which there is no remedy provided him by the law, sins not against the *spirit* of that law, however he may against the *letter*; and consequently seems to be intitled to an immunity from the penalties of it. This reasoning, though, respects only the reason of the law, and is by no means laid down as a rule for practice; it being the in-

dispensable duty of a subject to obey the plain letter of the law, without presuming to oppose his private opinion to it, otherwise than by humble application to proper authority to have it altered.

CHAP. LVI.

Chrysal's master's late conduct draws him into a new scrape, in which he comes off but second-best. He takes advantage of his misfortune to make his escape from a greater. He suffers the resentment of his enemies, as far as they can reach him; and meets from his friends the fate of all useless tools, after having served them with improbable success. A striking instance of the advantage of an upright judge, and equal laws. Chrysal changes his service.

THE opinion, that my master's having behaved in this manner proceeded from a want of spirit soon laid him under a necessity of showing the contrary. A person who was involved deeper than he chose to appear in his accusations against the minister, though he was known to be his creature, thought he might safely invalidate the credit of the charge, and curry further favour with his patron, by denying it in terms of such abuse, as should make the accuser infamous, on submitting to them, as he imagined he would.

But in this he found himself mistaken. The captiousness of false honour, that often passes for true resolution, which is the only result of virtue, was now picqued; and two beings (for it was impossible for the other to draw back) who called themselves rational hazarded their lives, in support of what neither could have supported by reason. The event proved immediately unfavourable to my master, who received a wound, that for some time seemed to threaten his life. But he soon thought the danger amply made amends for, by the pretence it gave him to put off from time to time the resentment of that part of the legislature to which he belonged, for the offence which had occasioned his being confined, and at length to fly from it, when he found it could not be any longer prevented by such finesses, from bursting on his head.

head. Such a flight was an implicit acknowledgment of his guilt. He was, therefore, deprived of his part in the legislature, and consequently of all the immunities annexed to it, and given up to the common course of the laws, for that and other matters, whenever he should be found within the reach of their power. Nor was this all! To show still stronger disapprobation of his conduct, the breach of those immunities, upon which the magistrate had founded his discharge from confinement, was overlooked, and such offences as his excluded from their protection for the future.

You cannot be surpris'd at his meeting such a fate. The tools of a statesman, however successful they may have been, are always thrown aside with neglect, the moment they have done their work; but when they fail, however blamelessly, or run into any error, though only from excess of zeal, the weight of the neglect is made still heavier, by heaping all the blame upon them. But what will you think, when I tell you, that, unequal as he must appear to have been to such an attempt, in consequence, character, and abilities, he rais'd so threatening a storm, that the minister thought proper to retire out of its way; as all his friends apprehended they should have been obliged to follow him: a success, for which he was in great measure indebted to the assistance of my late master, who represented their private characters in such colours, in his satirical writings, as will make their memories pay a dear price for their power, the poetical merit of his works, in which their names are branded with indelible infamy, ensuring their immortality. Such is the basis upon which statesmen found their greatness; and so easily is a jealous populace led away, by any thing that flatters their present humour.

I say not this, as deciding upon the merit of the disputes in which he was concerned. I think too meanly of human politics in general, to give my opinion in favour of any one scheme of them, in preference to another.— They are all alike a jumble of villany and blunders. All I intend is, to show on what a sandy foundation men who

value themselves upon their wisdom wear out their lives in anxious toils and dangers, to build their hopes; and what unworthy means are often made use of to overturn them, and work ends, reputed great on purpose, perhaps, to humble man in his own eyes. As for my master, he was no sooner removed out of the sight of the mob, whose idol he had been in such an extravagant degree, than he was entirely out of their mind, and the storm he had raised subsided so totally, as to leave no other trace behind it, but his ruin.

I have observed your anxiety to know whether he ever obtained redress for the injustice done him in his property, and the injurious treatment he received when he was first apprehended, as I said that the fellows employed to take him, had, under the sanction of authority, committed all the outrages of lawless ruffians. The interest you take in the cause of such a man can arise from nothing but your love of justice, which should not be violated in the person of the most unjust. It will, therefore, give you pleasure to be informed, that the laws of your country never shone with brighter lustre, than in this instance.— In despite of every artifice and effort which power and chicane could make use of to evade, or intimidate from, the execution of them (a striking instance of the latter of which was depriving his patron of every degree of power and honour, of which he could be deprived without regard to his great services and personal consequence, only for appearing in his cause) an able and upright magistrate supported them with such resolution and judgment, that he obtained exemplary redress for all he had suffered, that could be redressed, as did several others, who had been involved in the same circumstances, as having been employed by him.

In gratification to your curiosity, I have thus given you the general heads of his story. To have dwelt on the minuter circumstances, however curious in themselves, would have led me too great a length, besides that they now come within my design, as I was not directly in his possession when they happened. To return, therefore,

fore, now to the regular chain of my own adventures, I must go back to the time of my leaving his service, which was not very long after he had been released from his confinement. Among the crowds that came to congratulate him upon this event, was a clergyman, whose professions of personal attachment, and respect for his principles and abilities, were strained to such a fulsome height, as would, have disgusted vanity itself.

My master saw through him directly, and played him off with humour peculiar to himself, till he concluded with telling him, that he had a work then in hand, upon the same scheme with his, which he intended to publish by subscription. My master, who knew the man, took the hint, in the proper light of a modest way of begging, and clapped a couple of guines into his hand, desiring to be inserted in his list, upon which occasion I left his service.

CHAP. LV.

Reason of the joy with which Chrysal was received by his new master. Account of a curious, though not uncommon way of getting a living. Conversation between Chrysal's master and his guest. They compare notes on their different attempts in the literary trade. Chrysal's master is encouraged by his friend from his own example. A remarkable account of a certain matter that made much noise.

THE joy my new master felt on the receipt of 10 small a sum, showed the consequence it was of to him. He thanked his benefactor, in terms of rapture, and vowing eternal gratitude and attachment to him and his cause, departed with an happy heart. Nor was his joy without cause. He had invited an acquaintance to sup and spend the evening with him, and had neither money nor credit to provide any thing for his entertainment. Despicable as the vanity of making invitations in such circumstances may appear to you, it was one of his chief resources, to support himself and his family; as he never invited any, but such as he expected to borrow much more from than it cost him to entertain them. Your indignation at the mention of so mean a shift shows your happy ignorance
of

of the ways of this populous place, in which there are numbers, who keep up a decency of external appearance, and support life only by this method of raising contributions on their acquaintances, spending with one what they have got from another, in order to get from him too, and so on; with this difference only from common beggars, that they seldom apply to the same person twice, and instead of praying for their benefactors with an appearance of gratitude, wherever they meet them avoid their company, and are always seeking for new acquaintances, as quarry for them to prey upon. On this errand he had sallied out this morning, but met with such bad success, that he had been obliged to have recourse to the subscription-scheme, an addition which he had lately made to his former plan. His joy, therefore, at my late master's generosity was but natural. He returned home in high spirits, and giving his wife half his prize, to provide two or three nice little things, secured me, for future contingencies. Every thing being thus adjusted, his guest, who came punctually at the appointed time, was received with all the formalities and airs of politeness and high life. The conversation before, and at supper, ran on the usual topics, of the weather, politics, and the secret history of the day, but when my master's lady had withdrawn, and he saw his friend began to palate his wine with pleasure, (for he never made his push till the heart was warm) he took occasion from some modest mention the other made of his munificence in the relief of merit in distress, to lament his own inability to indulge that darling pleasure of his soul, as a proper introduction to his business.

‘I have wondered with much concern,’ answered his friend, ‘at your languishing so long in this obscurity. It is all your own fault. Why do you not exert yourself? There is nothing which spirit and diligence cannot conquer.’—‘Very true, my dearest friend,’ replied my master, with a shrug of his shoulders, and a heavy sigh. ‘But what can diligence or abilities either do, when they cannot find employment. I have offered myself to ministry and opposition, to booksellers and news-writers; and

‘ and all to no purpose : though indeed if it was not for
‘ the assistance of one of the latter, who now and then
‘ takes an essay or a letter from me, I should be utterly
‘ at a loss. So that what can I do ?’—

‘ What! why any thing rather than be idle. If one
‘ thing won’t do another may. There is not an article
‘ in the trade which I have not tried in my time. I have
‘ made bibles, magazines, and reviews ; sermons, ballads,
‘ and dying speeches ; and though all failed I never lost
‘ my spirit. The miscarriage of one scheme only set my
‘ invention at work to strike out another. No man can
‘ have greater difficulties to struggle with than I had ;
‘ and yet you see I have got over them all,’—‘ Yes! but
‘ my dearest friend, you had advantages! the counte-
‘ nance and assistance of such a patron as your’s!’—

‘ Were just as great advantages to me, as your patron’s
‘ are to you ; and no more. I had the honourable ad-
‘ vantage of leading a bear, for a bit of bread ; and be-
‘ traying his secrets to his father and mother, for the hope
‘ of a church-living, which I should not have got at last,
‘ but that it was not worth selling.’—‘ You astonish me!
‘ Don’t you owe all your preferments, all your afflu-
‘ ence, to the interest of your patron?’—

‘ What I owe my preferments to is not necessary to
‘ mention ; but my affluence I owe to a very different
‘ cause. The detection of that impostor was the thing
‘ that made my fortune. I might have remained in my
‘ original poverty to this day, if it had not been for that.’
‘ —For that! Is it possible? I cannot conceive that the
‘ profits upon the sale of a pamphlet or two (and that not
‘ a very extensive sale neither) could do such great things.
‘ My novel, I thought, bade as fair for a good run, as
‘ any thing : it was seasoned high to the taste of the
‘ times, and yet it did very little more than pay.’

‘ The sale! Ha! ha! ha! No, no! I did not depend
‘ upon that. My profit came in another way entirely.’
—‘ What can be your meaning? If it be not too great a
‘ secret, I should be much obliged to you to explain this
‘ matter. It may possibly be of service to me.’

‘ Why,

‘ Why, on that account, and as I think I can depend
‘ upon your honour, I don’t much care if I do. If you
‘ are so much surpris’d at my saying that I made my
‘ fortune by that pamphlet, what will you think when I
‘ tell you further, that I never wrote one line of it, nor
‘ was I any more concerned in the sale than you, who
‘ knew nothing of the matter? But not to perplex you
‘ with guessing at what it is impossible you should ever
‘ discover. You can be no stranger to the noise that
‘ impostor made, when he first came here. While he did
‘ no more than tell his own story, it was thought, by his
‘ old fraternity to be the best way not to give it conse-
‘ quence by contradicting it, but let it die away of itself;
‘ beside, that possibly it might not have been so easy to
‘ contradict it to any effect, while the persons concerned
‘ were all living, and the facts fresh in every one’s me-
‘ mory. But when he went so far as to attack the whole
‘ body, and was evidently undermining the foundation
‘ upon which they stood, by tearing off the veil of anti-
‘ quity behind which they hid themselves, and exposing
‘ all their mystery to light, the matter became more seri-
‘ ous, and it was judged necessary to ruin his character,
‘ in order to invalidate the credit of his work, the merit
‘ of which made a direct attack not only difficult, but
‘ also too doubtful of success to hazard an affair of such
‘ importance upon it,

‘ For this reason, heaven and hell were conjured up,
‘ and every engine set at work to prove his story of him-
‘ self false in every particular, and make him appear the
‘ most complicated villain that ever existed. But the
‘ credit of those who made this attack upon him was too
‘ low for it to have any effect, as their principles, and
‘ the interested motives upon which they proceeded, were
‘ sufficiently known, so that it only did him service, by
‘ showing his consequence. While they were consider-
‘ ing how to repair this defeat, necessity suggested to me
‘ the lucky thought of offering them my assistance. I
‘ had already got some degree of credit by anticipating
‘ time in the detection of two silly impostures, the ab-
‘ surdity

‘ furdity of which would soon have discovered them with-
 ‘ out my help. This gave weight to my offer : accord-
 ‘ ly they readily embraced it : and desiring only the sanc-
 ‘ tion of my name, (for which you may judge, I was well
 ‘ paid) took all the trouble upon themselves.

‘ The reason which defeated them assisted me. Every
 ‘ thing I was thought to say carried weight, as appearing
 ‘ to proceed from the highest candour, and attachment to
 ‘ truth, as nothing else could naturally be supposed to
 ‘ have made me take such pains to detect an imposture,
 ‘ so favourable to the principles I professed myself. The
 ‘ public also had got enough of his story, and was ready
 ‘ to listen to one against him. The consequence you
 ‘ know. His character was ruined with the public ; and
 ‘ of course a prejudice raised against his work, which
 ‘ ruined that also, without the trouble of a regular confu-
 ‘ tation, which, as I observed before, might not have been
 ‘ an easy matter : and now I hope the mystery is explain-
 ‘ ed to you.—

CHAP. LVI.

Chrysal's master makes some striking remarks on his friend's account of this mysterious transaction, and draws inferences from it, not commonly attended to. He entertains his friend with a curious song, who makes an important hit, just in his own character, upon it. Chrysal's master boggles a little at first, at his friend's proposal, but is encouraged by his example to undertake it.

‘ I AM much obliged to you, for such a proof of your
 ‘ confidence,’ returned my master, ‘ particularly,
 ‘ as it clears up some points to me, which I own gave
 ‘ me equal concern and surprise ; and of which delicacy
 ‘ prevented my desiring an explanation from you. These
 ‘ were the manner in which that attack was made
 ‘ upon him, and the arguments and proofs brought in
 ‘ support of it, which were so unfair, inconclusive, and
 ‘ in many instances contradictory, that I was astonished
 ‘ any man of sense and honesty could make use of, or be
 ‘ influenced by them.’—‘ Why, that is very true. Their
 ‘ zeal often over-shot the mark to be sure. But that fig-
 ‘ nified

‘nified nothing. Set the public once upon the scent of
‘scandal, and they’ll hunt it like blood-hounds, through
‘thick and thin. Nothing can be so gross as to stop them.
‘You may as well whistle to the wind to change its
‘course, as speak reason to the people, when they have
‘conceived a prejudice.’—But what is your opinion of
‘that affair? Is he, or is he not, the impostor they would
‘make him? For I confess, the arguments by which
‘they would prove him one are so far from answering their
‘design with me, that I think they prove the contrary,
‘by proving nothing; as it is natural to conclude, that
‘if there were any better, such would have not been made
‘use of. But you certainly must have had sufficient op-
‘portunities of being informed, in the intercourse you
‘necessarily had with them.’—‘As to that, I know no
‘more of the matter than you do, nor ever gave myself
‘the trouble to inquire. All the intercourse I had with
‘them, was only to save appearances, and get my money.
‘Whether he was an impostor or not was the same thing
‘to me. I was paid for seeming to prove him one;
‘and that was all I cared for.’—‘But you continue to call
‘him one still. Do they also pay you for that now?’—
‘No. I do that for my own credit. Were I to retract,
‘all the scandal that has been heaped upon him, in my
‘name, would revert upon myself, so that whenever I
‘mention him, I am obliged to do it in the old phrase.
‘I know some squeamish people would have scrupled
‘the whole; but that is not my way of thinking. I hold
‘nothing to be so great a reproach as poverty; nor any
‘thing a sin that can get over it. And so, here’s my
‘service to you. I wish you could hit upon such another
‘opportunity.’—‘And if I would scruple to make use
‘of it, may I perish in my present poverty; and I defy
‘the devil to find an heavier curse.’

The conversation then turned to more general topics,
in the course of which my late master naturally coming
to be mentioned, ‘That’s right,’ said my master, ‘I
‘have something to show you, that will give you pleasure.
‘You may remember, I told you, that I am sometimes
‘obliged

' obliged to a printer of my acquaintance for helping me
 ' to a job, in the letter or essay way. Happening to call
 ' upon him this morning, to try if he could take any thing
 ' from me, he showed me this,' pulling a piece of greasy
 ' paper out of his pocket, ' which I think really a curiosity.
 ' It is a proof of a bawdy-song, which the gentleman we
 ' have been talking of wrote, and had a few copies of
 ' printed for the amusement of his particular intimates.
 ' My friend got it from one of his journey-men, who
 ' sometimes works for that gentleman, and says there are
 ' a good many more of them, which are all printed toge-
 ' ther in a ballad. You'll find it worth your reading.
 ' Nothing ever was so highly worked up. It gave me in-
 ' effable pleasure.'—' If you can prove this to be wrote
 ' by that person,' (said the other spitting, and wriggling
 ' in his chair, after having poured over it for some time)
 ' your fortune is made! You know his enemies are striv-
 ' ing to run him down, by any means. Now, this will
 ' give them so plausible an handle against him, that they
 ' will not fail to reward you liberally for the discovery.
 ' All you have to do is, to prove it plainly upon him.'—

' I am pretty sure that may be done;' answered my
 ' master, with some hesitation, ' But I—I—I—I hardly
 ' know how.—I am under personal obligation.'—' Nay, if
 ' you let such things as that interfere, I give you up.
 ' What signifies past obligation, when put in competition
 ' with present interest? You know what my old anta-
 ' gonist says, that it is a rule among his former fraternity
 ' never to let any social or moral duties interfere with re-
 ' ligion, of which he gives a remarkable instance in his
 ' own story. Now, *my interest is my religion*; and every
 ' thing which interferes with that I abjure; as I have
 ' sufficiently proved. But I beg pardon, I would by no
 ' means press you to do any thing against your conscience,
 ' if it is so tender.'—' Wrong me not, my dearest friend
 ' by such an opinion: my conscience is as far from being
 ' tender as your's can be. I was only surprised that I
 ' had not myself seen what you mentioned. But now
 ' that your friendship has pointed it out to me, you shall

‘ see me pursue it as eagerly as you can desire. All I want is your direction! Leave the rest to me.’

The remainder of the evening was spent in consultation upon the plan proper to be pursued, the former of which my master submitted implicitly to the superior judgment and experience of his friend, who was so pleased with this mark of his respect, and so sure of success, that on going away he took a modest hint, and lent him five guineas, reminding him at the same time of the confidence he had placed in his honour, by disclosing his affairs to him, and enjoining him to secrecy.

CHAP. LVII.

Chrysal's master pursues his scheme, and violates moral honesty to serve the cause of virtue and religion. He waits upon his patron, who honestly refuses a character to which he knows he has no right; but undertakes the affair from a more prevailing motive, in which he is remarkably assisted by another person of less modesty, who pleads the cause of religion and virtue in vain, till honour at length turns the scale in their favour. Chrysal's master is disappointed in his hopes, and makes use of an expedient in character, to escape from the just reward of all his labours. Chrysal changes his service.

NOT to lose a moment's time, in a matter of such importance, my master went next morning to his worthy friend the printer, to whom he opened his scheme, and by his influence, with the assistance of the bribe, and promises of much more, he prevailed on the fellow from whom the former paper was got, to betray the trust of his employer, and steal the whole ballad. The next thing was to make his honest acquisition known to those from whom he expected the reward of his pious pains. For this purpose, he waited upon his patron, and having with difficulty gained access to him, on repeated messages of important business after the common cant of compliments, ‘ I am come, sir,’ said he, ‘ on an errand that, I know agreeable to you, as it will afford a signal opportunity of showing your regard for religion and virtue.’—‘ Heh!’ answered his patron. ‘ My regard for religion and virtue!’

‘tue! What the devil does the fellow mean? What regard have I ever shown for either, in word or action, that should put such a thought in your head? If you are come to preach to me, you shall soon find the effects of your piety.’—‘Pardon me, sir; I know you better than to be guilty of such presumption! What I mean is this: Fortune has favoured me with an opportunity of putting it into your power to establish such a character; and as I know most people are fond of the name, when it can be obtained without the trouble of the practice, I thought it my duty to acquaint you with it; especially, as it will enable you, at the same time, to do a particular pleasure to your friends in power.’—‘Why, there may be something in that, as you say; but for the rest, I care as little for the name as I do for the practice; and would not give myself a moment’s trouble to get it; so, be quick, and let me hear what you have got to say. I have a match to ride to-morrow against a gentleman for a considerable wager, and must see his groom this morning in order to *settle matters with him*; besides which, I have an assignation with his wife, who expects me at this very time, so that I have not a moment to lose about religion and virtue.’

My master, who knew him too well to attempt interfering with such engagements, politely wished him success, and then gave him, in few words, an account of the whole affair, only reserving to himself the honour of the thought, with which his patron was so pleased, that he promised to give him all the assistance in his power, *if it was only for the fun of the thing*. Accordingly, as soon as he could spare time from his own weightier concerns, he mentioned the matter to those more immediately concerned in it, who embraced the project eagerly, and rewarded my master with the most liberal promises for his pains, of which they resolved to take advantage, in order to crush a person, either hated or feared by every one among them.

In the attack made upon him for this purpose, the principal part was undertaken by one, whose regard for religion and virtue was heightened by a motive not the

most consistent with either. This was the person who had been competitor with the culprit for the higher order of the *mock-monastery*. In the account I gave you of that curious transaction, I observed that he cherished a secret grudge against the other, which was aggravated so violently by the disgrace he suffered on that occasion, that he had prevailed to have him expelled the society. Such an opportunity, therefore, as this, of completing his revenge, was not to be missed by one of his principles.—Accordingly, though at the sight of the ballad he knew it to be no more than one of a collection of the songs which he had himself often bore a part in singing at the monastery, and some of the worst of which he had boasted of being the author of, he inveighed against it with all the fervency and enthusiastic zeal of a modern fanatic, and displayed the danger of letting such an insult upon every thing held sacred go unpunished, in such strong and affecting colours, as afforded high entertainment to all who heard him, and were acquainted with his life. But all his eloquence would have proved ineffectual to make such of his fraternity as were not, like him, stimulated by private motives, give the lie to their own practice in so flagrant a manner, as to censure the theory of it, had not some particular expressions happened to affect the honour of one of them ; whom all the rest of course espoused ; and thus, for once, honour turned the scale in favour of virtue and religion, too light by themselves ; and the ballad was condemned, as tending to debauch the principles of the people, though it was sufficiently known that it was not designed for publication, nor would ever have been heard of, had not this attack raised a curiosity about it.

Through the whole of this important transaction, my master performed his part most cleverly, stopping at nothing that was thought any way necessary to bring it to effect. As soon, therefore, as it was concluded, he prepared to receive the reward of his labour, the enjoyment of which he had anticipated in imagination in every shape it could be given. But it was not long before he found his hopes had been too sanguine. Instead of being re-warded

warded immediately, as he had been made to expect, the job was scarcely done, when he could perceive the smiles of favour grow cooler upon him, as often as he went to pay his court to his patrons, in order to keep them in mind of their promises. A state of such uncertainty, severe enough upon any, was not to be borne by one in his circumstances. The expectations he had raised, in the height of his hopes, had opened the mouths of all his creditors upon him, with an importunity not to be quieted ; beside, that he had imbezzled some public money entrusted to him, a demand for which he expected every day, and knew he could not shift off for a moment.

Driven almost to distraction by such irresistible necessity, he had no resource, but to throw himself at the feet of the person who had appeared most sanguine in the pursuit of his scheme, and consequently been most liberal of his promises to him, and implore his assistance to extricate him from his accumulated distresses. But they who will most readily avail themselves of villany, always detest the villain. All the return he received was a cold profession of concern ; and a shameless excuse of wanting that power to relieve him, which the caitiff suppliant well knew he had. A new misfortune often lightens the weight of those under which the mind was sinking before, by rousing it from listless dejection to an exertion of its powers. Such a disappointment of his only hope shewed him all the horrors of his situation ; and made him instantly cast about how to escape from what he found he could not redress : instead, therefore, of betraying it by his looks, which he knew were watched, he assumed an air of uncommon spirits, and telling every one that he had got a positive assurance of receiving the promised reward without any further delay, he went to one of his tradesmen, by that time he thought the news might have reached him, and taking up goods to a considerable amount, for which he confidently engaged to pay at a fixed and short day, no sooner got them into his possession, than he sold them privately at half price, and packing up whatever he could carry with him, fled beyond the reach of his

his creditors; and so proved how far his late conduct had proceeded, as he professed, from his high regard to moral virtue and religion.

The agitation and horrors of his mind, from the time he had resolved upon flight, till he had effected it, may be easily conceived. Whether the present safety it procured him gave him any lasting relief, I had not an opportunity of seeing, as I quitted his service, at the inn where he took a post-chaise to get off; though it is most probable, that, after the first hurry of his spirits subsided, a sense of the various villanies, by which he had brought himself to such a state of exile, imbittered the very blessing of liberty, and kept his mind in slavery, though his body was free.

CHAP. LVIII.

Cbrysal again changes his service. His new master is obliged to pay expedition fees, to get over artificial delays. He and his mistress set out on a long journey, to do what might have been better done at home. Cbrysal makes some interesting reflections on a most important subject. Story of Cbrysal's master. Cbrysal continues his reflections on the same subject, which he considers in a further and most affecting point of view. Cbrysal changes his service.

MY late master had scarce decamped, when a young gentleman came into the inn, and ordering a chaise and four to be got ready with the utmost expedition, gave my new master a bank-note to pay for it, in the change of which he received me.

The anxiety which my new master expressed to have the grooms make haste was a sufficient reason for them to practice every delay they could devise, in order to extort expedition fees, at which they were so expert, that he was forced to give them almost as much as he paid for the chaise, before he could get it to stir. When at length every thing was settled, he directed them to a particular place, where a hackney-coach waited for him, out of which he received a young lady, with a couple of small bundles, and then bade the postillions drive on; but they had no sooner got out of the town, than he changed his orders,
and

and directed them to take another road. This occasioned a new delay. The fellows alledged their being obliged to go where their master had ordered them, and no where else; and made so many difficulties, that, as they expected, my master was compelled to purchase their compliance at their own price. All obstacles being thus got over, he turned to the young lady, who sat trembling and panting by his side, and embracing her tenderly, ‘Now, my dearest love,’ said he, ‘all our fears are over. Should we even be traced to the inn, this turn will effectually baffle all pursuit.’—‘I wish it may,’ answered she, ‘but I shall never think myself safe, till I am absolutely out of their reach, and all is over.’

The conversation of lovers is agreeable only to themselves. The rest of their’s for two days, as they flew rather than travelled (for which expedition they paid sufficiently, every set of postillions giving the word to the next) will not bear repetition. As soon as they got to the end of their journey, they put an end to their most immediate fears also, by a marriage, which might have been performed with a much greater probability of success at home, had not a positive law prevented it.

I see your surprise at my saying that a positive law prevented marriage, as the prosperity of the community depends in the first degree on the promotion of that state. But so it happens in human affairs, that the true interest of the people is not always the first object of the laws made for their government. Though too general experience confirms this remark, it is necessary to explain the particular circumstance that gives occasion to it, in this instance. The first end of marriage is the propagation of the species, in the manner most agreeable to reason, and likely to produce the happiness of the parties, as well as the population of the state. As the passions which lead to this end are strongest before reason has acquired strength to direct them, it is necessary that they should be subject to the direction of others, who may be better qualified to discern and promote their interest. This right of direction naturally belongs to those who are most intimately concerned

cerned in that interest, as affecting a part of themselves ; and hence, among every people upon earth, however differing in other respects and customs, this right of directing matrimonial choice has always belonged to the parents ; till maturity of age may be presumed to ripen judgment, and to remove the necessity upon which it is founded. But, however evident this right is, the passions of youth so often rebel against it, that it was found necessary to enforce it by express laws. These laws, though, the professed end of which is to make marriage happy, should never be perverted to the unnatural purpose of preventing it entirely, by clogging it with such unnecessary and unreasonable restrictions, as tend to subjugate not only natural liberty, but also the highest interest of the state, which depends upon population, to avarice, caprice, or pride of family in parents ; or to views of interest in those appointed to supply their place. The particular case of my master, which gave occasion to these reflections, was this : He was the younger son of a noble family, to the honours of which his rising virtues promised to add new lustre. Youthful inclination had first attached him to this lady, whose merits upon acquaintance confirmed that attachment more than her very large fortune. Such a marriage could not fail to meet the approbation of reason and paternal prudence. Accordingly, every necessary preliminary was agreed upon, when the sudden death of her father threw in legal obstacles, which threatened to prevent it, at least for a longer time than youthful impatience could bear. For, as he had not actually signed to his consent, those to whom the care of his daughter devolved, thought proper to exert the right which the law gave them of objecting to the disparity between her fortune, and that of her lover, and so break off a match evidently for their mutual advantage. When the lovers found that all they could do to influence their compliance was ineffectual, they had recourse to this expedient (which the sage makers of the law had, perhaps inadvertently, left open) to evade it, by flying beyond its power ; and there solemnized a marriage, which should be valid at their return

turn home, though entered into without any of the prudential cautions for securing happiness, which are customary on such occasions, and he had in vain offered to come into; so that the law which was professedly designed to prevent inconsiderate and unhappy marriages, in its effect deprived this, and the many marriages of the kind, of the means for procuring happiness, which former laws, founded on reason, had provided for them.

It is not to be denied, but the evils which were immediately alledged as the occasion of this law called aloud for remedy; but whether the remedy provided by it did not introduce an inconvenience of worse consequence to the public than those evils, is not so clear a case. Whatever restrictions might have been thought necessary, in worldly wisdom, to prevent secret marriages, by which either the honours of families might be supposed to suffer diminution, or their fortunes fall a prey to mercenary design, where these considerations interfere not, such restrictions should never, in good policy, extend. On the contrary, every impediment and delay, not immediately proceeding from moral necessity, should be removed; and the state of matrimony encouraged by such honours and advantages as should counterbalance the inconveniences of it to persons labouring under circumstances of indigence; by which means, the inferior ranks of the people, whose numbers make the strength of a state, would be delivered from the difficulties and fears which at present deter them from entering into matrimony, to the heavy loss of the community, and the immediate ruin of such numbers of both sexes, whose natural passions, debarred from this, their only proper resource, lead them into such vices, as defeat the end of their creation, and make them a reproach to humanity. How many infants would daily be saved from the most unnatural murder, to the ornament and advantage of their country, could the wretched parents have saved their own shame by marriage? How many females, who offer themselves in the highways to brutal prostitution, perishing with cold, hunger, and disease, might have been the happy mothers of many children,

dren, and performed all the duties of their station in virtuous esteem, had not their being hindered from marrying by impediments made by law, betrayed them to destruction?

As soon as my master had thus accomplished the end of his journey, he set out on his return, to enjoy the fruits of it at home. But I continued not in his possession to see much of that mutual happiness which his marriage promised, being borrowed from him on the road, by a gentleman of his acquaintance, who had been bubbled out of all his money at a horse-race, and was now fighting his way to town, by running in debt at every inn, and raising contributions thus on all he met, of whom he had the least knowledge.

CHAP. LIX.

Cbrysal's new master strikes out an adventure. He is smitten with a girl in a travelling-waggon, and changes his appearance, to get admission to her. Account of the company in the waggon. A good-natured mistake of one of the passengers gives occasion to a broil, which is put an end to by an accident that does not mend the matter.

DISTRESSING as such a situation would have been to another, custom had made it so familiar to my new master, that he thought nothing of it, but travelled on with his equipages, as unconcerned, and ready to engage in any mad freak, as if his pockets were full of money. Nor was he long without an opportunity of indulging his disposition. As he was rolling carelessly along, his chariot was stopped in a narrow part of the road, by one of those travelling waggons, whose unwieldy weight gives them the privilege of taking place of their betters. Such a circumstance naturally made the travellers in both carriages look out, when he was struck with the uncommon beauty of a young creature in the waggon, whose charms in the first opening of their bloom, gave scope to imagination to paint a prospect, if possible beyond their present perfection.

Such temptation could scarce be resisted by one who had reasoned his passions into the best subjection, much less

less by him, who blindly obeyed them in, or rather stimulated them to their utmost excess. He no sooner saw, therefore, than he resolved to have her by any means. The first thing to be done, for this pious purpose, was to change his appearance, in order to get into her company, as the least suspicion of his rank would directly *blow* his design. But this was no difficulty. He was well accustomed to lay it down; and the meanest character in life sat as naturally upon him as his own. Accordingly, as soon as his chariot passed the waggon, he drove on furiously, till he was out of sight, when he alighted, and changing clothes with one of his servants out of livery, ordering them to leave the great road, and wait for him at an inn, some miles distance across the country. Thus equipped for his enterprise, he walked on leisurely, like a common traveller, till he was over-taken by the waggon, the driver of which *plied* him in the usual way to take a place, which after some affected difficulties he agreed to. But the greatest difficulty arose not from him. The waggon was already so full, that when the driver mentioned taking in another, the passengers all cried out against it with one voice. But his authority was too absolute to be resisted. He fixed his ladder, and ordered them to make room, barely condescending to say that it was for a gentleman who had been taken suddenly ill, and wanted to go only to the next village. This circumstance, though treated with brutal disregard by the rest, had an immediate effect upon the tender disposition of his destined prey, who squeezing closer to her mother, he crept into his nest, and settled himself as conveniently as he could next to her in the straw.

The company into which he had thus thrust himself seemed to be a representative of all the heteroclite characters of the age. Beside the young female, whose appearance had attracted him, and her mother, a plain, good-looking woman, it consisted of a mountebank-doctor, and his zany, a methodist-preacher, a strolling-actor and actress, a fat ale-wife, a servant-maid, who was going to London to repair a cracked reputation, a recruiting

serjeant, and two recruits, an outlawed smuggler, and a broken exciseman. Though my master could not, at first view, distinguish all their different characters, some of them were so strongly marked, that he promised himself the highest entertainment from the clashing which he concluded must inevitably arise in such a groupe, and was resolved to promote upon the first occasion. But an accident soon gave him that pleasure without the trouble of planning it.

As the weather was warm, and few of the company could be suspected of the delicacy of changing their clothes often, it may be supposed that every savour which arose among them was not purely aromatic. My master had not been many minutes in his place, when the various odours fuming round him had such an effect upon his senses, that he undesignedly breathed a wish for a bottle of *spirits*.

As he had been introduced under the pretence of being sick, the ale-wife, who happened to be near him, mistook his meaning, and thought he wanted a *dram*, not once dreaming of any other use of spirits. Pulling out a flask, therefore, from under a coat, in the height of good-nature, 'Spirits!' said she, 'they are poisonous stuff. Here is what will do you more good by half!' Then drawing the cork, and taking a sup, to show him that it was not poison, 'Drink of this,' continued she, reaching him the flask, 'and I'll warrant it will settle you. It is right Hollands.'—Before my master had time to accept or refuse her offer, the actor, who sat between them, *smoked* her mistake, and intercepting the bottle, as she reached across him, cried out in triumph,

'Bravo, my queen! your gin, from Holland pure,
'My stomach sooner than his head will cure.'

Then taking a large *go-down* or two, 'Here Belvidera,' added he, giving the bottle to the actress, 'in this friendly cup drown all your sorrows!—Drink, as you love me, deep.' His faithful mate could not disobey such a command. She took the bottle, and lifting it to her head, 'Thus to the bottom,' said she, 'though it were a mile!'

But

But she was interrupted in her intention by the smuggler, who lay at her feet, and no sooner smelt the dear liquor, than he raised his head, and perceiving what she was about, 'Avast hauling there,' cried he, snatching the bottle from her mouth, 'or you'll pump the scupper dry.'—And then going to put it up to his own, 'Hold,' said the exciseman, catching his hand with the same design, 'I seize this in the king's name, till I know whether it has paid duty.'

The mention of the word *duty* set the smuggler's blood on fire. 'Duty! you shark!' said he, grasping the bottle faster, and catching him in return by the throat with the other hand, 'I'll seize you! damn my eyes, and limbs! I'll pay you the duty, if you don't loose your hold this moment, you scoundrel! that I will.' Though he griped the exciseman's throat so hard, that he could not return his compliment in words, he scorned to yield the prize without one effort. Giving a twist, therefore, with all his force, to wrest it out of his antagonist's hand, though he could not succeed, he prevailed so far as to turn the mouth of the bottle downwards, by which means the contents were poured full in the face of the serjeant, who lay snoring, on his back with his mouth wide open.

Welcome as such a guest would have been in a proper manner, the intrusion thus unexpectedly was not so agreeable. He started up, half suffocated; and belching his dose full in the face of one of the recruits, 'Blood anouns! fire and fury!' spattered he. 'What's the meaning of all this?' Just as he said this, one of the wheels of the waggon came into a deep hole, with such a plump, that though it did not absolutely overset, it tumbled all the passengers on top of one another; and instantly put a stop to the cries of the ale-wife, for the loss of her liquor.—The screams, oaths, and execrations of the whole company, on this occasion, would have given my master the highest delight, had he not been rather too nearly concerned to enjoy the *fun*, the fat ale-wife being thrown so full upon him, that he was unable to stir, though almost smothered, so that he could not help adding his cries to the concert.

Chrysal's master experiences some comfortable consequences from the obliging disposition of the waggoner. He pursues his design, by paying common civility to his mistress's mother. Conversation and behaviour of the company. Chrysal's master, in the pursuit of his design, meets an adventure that cools his passion, and reassembles the company, when they are all like to be at a fault, till one of them luckily hits off the scent.

WHEN the driver had got his waggon out of the hole, and seen that all was safe about it, he came to know what was the matter with his passengers; and having *unpacked* them, my master had the pleasure to hear the young woman propose to her mother to walk a little way, till some, not the most agreeable, consequences of the late disaster should blow off, to which she readily consented, as he prepared to accompany them, both for the same reason, and in order to have an opportunity of making an acquaintance, which he found he could not so well do in the waggon. But the waggoner was not in the humour to give them that indulgence. When they called to him to let them down, he answered surlily, that they had not above a couple of miles to their inn; and if they were to stop thus every moment, he should not get in, in time, and so without any further ceremony whipped on his horses. This was a severe disappointment to my master, who soon grew so sick, that he could not hold up his head all the rest of the way.

But the qualms of his stomach did not affect his conscience, so as to make him in the least alter his design. On his arrival at the inn, he made a pretence of the compassion which the young girl and her mother had expressed for him, to attach himself particularly to them, and ply them with wine, by way of return, which false modesty made the mother take so freely as gave him good hopes of success. The conversation and behaviour at supper was strictly in the character of the company. The methodist made a long grace, and talked of religion and temperance, while he eat more than any two at the table,
and

and his eyes were gloating at the servant maid, his fellow-traveller, who seemed to listen to him with great complacency and attention. The actor mimicked the methodist to his face, and lolled out his tongue at every one else, as they happened to look another way. The actress spoke in heroics, and turned up her nose at every thing and every body. The smuggler and exciseman sat growling at each other, as if they meant to make a further trial of their manhood. The serjeant talked of his exploits in the wars, and proved his valour by an oath at every word, which his two pupils listened to with looks of admiration, that showed they designed to imitate that part of his example at least. The ale-wife lamented the loss of her gin, which, she said, she could not replace with any like it, on the whole road. In short, every body eat and talked; and talked and eat together, except the girl and her mother, who were quite lost in astonishment, at a scene so new to them, and my master, whose thoughts were too much taken up with his own scheme to mind any thing else. Accordingly, he stepped out when supper was ended, and engaging the chamber-maid in his interest, by a present of half a crown, she showed him where his mistress was to lie, and promised to settle all things in the manner most convenient to his designs, by putting her and her mother in the bed next to the door, there being two in the room, and placing in the other the servant-maid, who paid for a bed to herself, as her modesty would not permit her to sleep with a stranger.

As soon as the house was quiet, and my master thought the wine which he had forced upon the mother had secured her, he got up, and stealing in his shirt to the door of their chamber, found it open, upon which he entered and crept to the bed, where he expected to find his mistress, without ever considering what must be the consequence of surprising her in such a manner. Opening the curtains, therefore, softly, to feel, by the difference of size, on which side she lay, he had scarce put his hand upon the clothes, when it was seized and griped so hard, that he soon lost all thought of every thing but disengag-

ng himself. For this purpose, he made two or three efforts, but finding them ineffectual, and provoked at the pain his hand suffered in the struggle, he discharged a blow with the other full in the face of his antagonist, who springing directly out of bed, returned it with such usury, that my poor master fell sprawling on the floor, where he roared out murder with all his might, in which he was immediately joined by those who lay in the other bed, whose cries not only raised the house to his rescue, but also saved him from further violence, his antagonist desisting to beat him, in order to make his retreat in time.

When those who lay nearest were assembled at the door, half clad, and worse armed with whatever they could catch up in their confusion, prudential regard to personal safety made them all stop short, every one finding some pretence to excuse himself from going in first, and pressing the post of honour upon his neighbour, till they at length raised their fears so high, that it was uncertain whether any one would venture in before day-light, though the cries still continued, had not the smuggler, who did not wake to join them at first, put an end to the debate. ‘Damn you all,’ said he, snatching a candle from one, and a poker from another, ‘for a pack of cowardly lubbers! Will you stand *jawing* here, while the people are murdering?’ Then rushing in, ‘Hallo!’ continued he, ‘what’s going forward here, in the devil’s name?’

The first object that presented itself to his view, when he entered, was my master, who was still upon the ground, unable, between fright and beating, to arise. Advancing to him, therefore, ‘Hip, messmate!’ said he, giving him a kick on his naked posteriors, ‘what cheer? Speak if you are alive!’—The entrance of light restoring my master to some spirit, he raised his head at this salute, and making an effort to get up, ‘I scarce know whether I am or not,’ answered he, ‘I have been so beaten by that bitch of Babel; but she shall pay for it, if I ever recover.’ The place where he was found directing this accusation to the person in that bed, while some of them helped him

him up, the rest gathered round it, and asked the servant-maid, who lay there, what had induced her to treat the gentleman in such a manner? But the mention of her name saved her the trouble of a reply. Before she could speak, ‘It was not she!’ exclaimed my master: ‘I mean the old beldam, mother to the young witch, whose baby-face brought me among you, and who lay in this bed. It was she who abused me thus; or rather some porter in woman’s clothes, who passed for her, for no woman ever had such strength.’—‘I believe you must be mistaken, sir,’ interposed the exciseman, ‘the people you mean are lying quietly in the next bed, and seem to be as much frightened as you are hurt.’—‘How!’ returned my master, ‘did they not lie in this bed, next the door?’—‘No,’ answered the other, ‘Mrs. Margery lies here, as grave and demure as a whore at a christening.’—‘Then the jade of a chamber-maid played me a trick,’ replied my master. ‘But who the devil lay with her? For I am sure she was never able to do what I have suffered.’—‘As for that!’ said the actor, who had all the while been peeping round the bed, ‘I believe it will be no hard matter to find it out. These breeches,’ pulling a pair from under the bolster, ‘must belong to somebody, and will certainly point out her bed-fellow, if the lady, like a true Amazon, did not wear them herself.’

CHAP. LXI.

The advantage of a ready assurance. The methodist accounts curiously for what he has done; and turning the tables upon Chrysal’s master, charges him with robbery, who is thereupon obliged to discover himself, but is contradicted by one of the company, who boasts of a curious acquaintance with him in his own character. He is luckily recognized by a footman, whose master extricates him from his distress, and makes out the mistakes that had caused so much confusion.

AS the breeches were immediately known to belong to the methodist, they marched away directly to his bedside, for he had not joined them, and asked him how he had come to use the gentleman in that inhuman manner,

ner, showing him my master, whom they had dragged along with them.

‘Who I?’ answered the methodist, affecting all the surprise of innocence, and determined to deny what he thought could not be proved, ‘heaven forbid that I should use any fellow christian ill. I engage not in such broils. My warfare is with the spirit.’—‘And sometimes with the flesh, too, I believe, doctor!’ interrupted the actor. ‘Nay, it is in vain to deny it! Do you know these breeches, doctor?’ ‘Breeches!’ exclaimed he, starting up in real affright, and fumbling under his bolster, ‘Oh they are gone! they are gone! I am robbed, ruined, and undone!’—‘No, doctor; they are not gone, as you see! but the question is, how they came under the young woman’s bed’s-head, where this gentleman received this abuse.’—‘Let him answer that!’ replied the methodist, never at a loss for an impudent lie. ‘Let him answer that! all I know of the matter is this: being disturbed in my rest, I then knew not, but now plainly perceive by what cause, I arose to pray, as is my custom, when hearing somebody go softly out of the room, I watched, as was my duty, to prevent any evil, and following the footsteps into another chamber, caught a man in the very fact of attempting the virtue of some female, who lay there; upon which, expostulating with him upon the heinousness of such a crime, he flew at me so furiously that I could scarce defend myself from him, and if in the fray he received any hurt, he must charge it to himself, as he was the aggressor: but this is not the whole; I now perceive, that I was disturbed out of my sleep by his stealing my breeches from under my head, which he accordingly took with him into the room of that damsel, and therefore I demand justice against him for the attempt, as well as for any loss I may have suffered.’—Saying this he took his breeches out of the actor’s hand, and searching the pockets, ‘It is too true!’ continued he, gnashing his teeth, and wringing his hands, in a perfect agony. ‘It is too true! I am ruined and undone: I am robbed of all the money which I had collected in my

‘ my pilgrimage to relieve the poor of the Lord. Twenty
‘ golden guineas, beside silver, and other monies. Let
‘ him be searched : let every body be searched this mo-
‘ ment. I must have my money ! I must have my money !’

As my master was a stranger to them all ; and not blessed with a face that could bespeak much favour, they began to give credit to the charge against him, especially, as the servant-maid corroborated it, by saying that he had also been rumaging for her pockets, when that worthy gentleman interrupted him (for women and all were now gathered to hear the matter canvassed) and talked of carrying him before a magistrate in the morning, that he might be sent to jail. At another time, such a scence would have given him the highest pleasure, but he had no taste for fun now. Enraged, therefore, at the iniquity of such a charge, and the insolence with which they were proceeding to treat him, ‘ Unhand me, at your perils, ‘ you scoundrels’ said he, telling them who he was. ‘ Un- ‘ hand me, this moment. As for that infamous villain, and ‘ his trull, I charge you to secure them directly, and send ‘ in my name for a magistrate. I’ll make examples of them, ‘ at least.’ You may conceive with what surprise they were all struck at hearing this. However, as he gave only his bare word for it, all were not equally ready to believe him. ‘ You, my friend Scapegrace!’ said the actor, coming and looking him full in the face. No ! no ! Sir : ‘ say that to those who don’t know him. I am his inti- ‘ mate companion ; his chosen among ten thousand. There ‘ is not a fine girl upon the town but we have bilked ; nor ‘ an house in the hundred of Drury where we have not ‘ kicked up a dust together. He and I are Pylades and ‘ Orestes ; sworn friends and brothers. No ! no ! that stroke ‘ won’t pass upon me.’

This made matters worse than ever with my master, adding ridicule to insult, which was poured upon him in such torrents from every mouth, that he could not speak a word in his own defence. But his distress lasted not long. The servants of a gentleman who luckily happened to lie at the inn that night, being raised by the uproar,
one

one of them knew my master, through all his disguises. 'By your leave, there!' said he, rushing through the crowd, and shoving aside some of them, who had already laid hold of him. 'Are you all mad, to use a gentleman in this manner?'—Then addressing himself to my master, 'What is the matter, please your honour? I am sorry to see your honour in such a pickle. My master,' naming him, 'is in the house, and will do you justice. I'll run, and call him directly.' Such a testimony instantly turned the scale, and made those who were most insolent to him before, now most officious to pay him respect and attendance. Accordingly, he was removed, without asking his leave, into his own room, where they were preparing to humanize his appearance, when the gentleman entered. Much as my master was above the weakness of shame, he could not avoid feeling something like it, on being caught in such a condition. He was sitting on the side of the bed, covered only with the ragged remains of his shirt, which had been torn to pieces in the fray, daubed all over with blood and dirt, and beaten to such a degree, that he scarce retained one feature of the human face divine, which had not lost all likeness of the original. The gentleman started at such a spectacle, and stopped short, in doubt whether it could be he, till my master's voice satisfied him: when he gave orders to have every one concerned in the affair secured, and then seeing the poor sufferer taken proper care of, and put to bed, he proceeded to inquire into the matter, the circumstances of which appeared to be these: The methodist having agreed with the servant-maid, his fellow-traveller, to have some spiritual conversation with her that night, she promised to lie in the bed next the door, and, therefore, after the chamber-maid had assigned them their quarters, as she had settled with my master, feigned some pretence to desire a change, which the others readily consented to. Accordingly, as the methodist was secure of his reception, he came soon, and was got into bed to his disciple, when my master made his attempt, whose hand he seized, in the manner I have related; and would have beaten him
still

still more severely for his intrusion, had it not been for his crying out, upon which he retreated to his own bed, in such a hurry, to escape detection, that he forgot his breeches, which he had taken with him, for fear some of his chamber-fellows should search them, and rob him of eight or ten guineas, that he had picked up in the course of his preaching about the country, and the actor had made bold to take as lawful prize, when they fell into his hands, and afterwards found means to convey to his wife, for more security. Every thing being thus cleared up, the gentleman advised my master to drop the affair, as prosecuting it would only expose him still more, to which he willingly agreed, having no inclination for any further trouble about it.

The methodist, though, was far from being so easily pacified for the loss of the fruits of his summer's labour, in the vineyard, which he thought worse of than a thousand beatings, and was resolved to recover if possible, in spite of all their scoffs and insults. But the detection of the other part of his story had so entirely destroyed his credit, that he found it in vain to persist, especially as the actor offered to make oath that he had that very evening applied to him, to borrow a shilling to pay his reckoning. Cursing them all, therefore, in the bitterness of his soul, he changed his route, and went upon another preaching progress in order to retrieve his loss, in which pious work he prevailed upon his disciple and fellow-sufferer in shame, the servant-maid, whose pockets had escaped the pillagers, to accompany him.

By this time the waggon was ready to set out, when the rest of the company departed, except the actor and his lady, who were so tired of that vulgar way of travelling, that they thought proper to continue their journey in the stage-coach; and my master, who was laid up in salves and flannels, had lost both ability and inclination to pursue his enterprise any farther.

CHAP. LXII.

Cbrysal gives a striking account of his master. He arrives in London, and pays a visit to his mistress. His curious

rious method of courting. His mistress makes him a present of half her fortune befbrehand, in return for which he promises to marry her next day, and then goes to his girl. Difference in his behaviour to the two naturally accounted for. An uncommon guest at a wedding, with as uncommon a manner of celebrating a nuptial night, show a still more uncommon instance of matrimonial complaisance. Chrysal changes his service.

THE singularity of my master's character gave me a curiosity to take a view of his life, while he was sleeping off some of the effects of his late adventure. He was born in a rank, that supported the fair hopes of honour and advantage, which the first opening of his youth universally raised. But an error in his education blasted all those hopes in the bud, and drove him into every extreme of vice and folly, which it was designed to guard against. The bad consequences which are seen to attend indulging the passions too far, often lead weak minds to attempt suppressing them entirely, without considering that the crime is only in the excess. The difficulty and pain of this attempt throws such a gloom over the whole appearance, as hides the native beauty of virtue, and makes it seem to be the source of unhappiness to those who view it only in these effects, so as to terrify them from the pursuit of it.

On this error pretended enthusiasts have in every age founded their influence, by enslaving the mind to groundless terrors, which they never fail to turn to their own advantage. To the conduct of such blind and base guides, the mother of my master, to whom the sole care of his education had fallen by the death of her husband, implicitly resigned herself, and of course her son, in return for which they flattered her fanaticism and vanity together, with promises of breeding him up in the perfection of sanctity. For this purpose he was debarred from every innocent recreation, and harrassed with studies improper for his age. His appetites were mortified by fasting; his rest was broken to chaunt hymns, and pray; nor was he allowed even to speak but in scripture-phrases; and all as
the

the indispensable duties of virtue and religion. Such a slavery naturally gave him so great an aversion to every thing that bore their names, that the moment he became his own master he placed the supreme pleasure of his life in acting in contradiction to them, by every instance of expensive and vicious excess, in which he squandered away the inheritance of his ancestors, and broke his constitution with a rapidity that gave scandal to vice, put folly out of countenance, and made his name a by-word in an age of excesses. And in this situation he was when I came into his possession. Though it was near noon before he awoke, the gentleman whose presence had so luckily relieved him the night before waited to see him, when he completed his kindness by lending him money to defray his expences up to town, upon which he sent for his equipage, and set off without further concern at what had happened. On his arrival in London, he drove directly to the last place which any other man in his circumstances would have thought of going to. This was the house of a lady of large fortune, to which he had paid his addresses, since his extravagance had dissipated his own; and with this peculiar honesty, that he never even pretended a regard to herself. The success of such a courtship must appear improbable, but there is no accounting for the caprice of woman. She had taken a liking to him which seemed to rise in proportion to the flights he showed her, and was resolved to gratify, if only nominally, for she could expect no more at the hazard of every happiness of life.

It may be supposed that the sight of him, in such a condition, struck her severely. She flew to him, threw her arms around his neck, and bemoaned his misfortune in the most passionate terms. But that was not what he wanted. Shaking her off, without feigning the least return to her fondness, 'Psha!' said he, 'leave off this stuff; and let me know whether you have got the money I told you I should want to pay off those debts of honour: if you have, and will also give me up the rest of your fortune, without reserve, I'll marry you.'—

‘Will you!’ exclaimed she, in rapture, ‘then you have it, if it were ten times as much. Here it is,’ opening a bureau, and reaching him a handful of bank-notes, ‘I sold out half my fortune to raise it the very day you spoke to me.’—‘I wish I had known that,’ said he, putting the notes in his pocket, ‘and then I might have made my excursion into the country longer. Farewel! I’ll call upon you to-morrow evening, and conclude the job. Do you have the hangman and halter ready.’—‘What do you mean? I don’t understand you.’—‘What should I mean but the parson and the ring. Is not that an halter? And does he not hang us up with it for life?’—‘But, can’t you stay a few moments: I want to know how you came in that condition!’

‘It was only a scrape about a wench. I’ll tell you the particulars another time. My girl would not forgive me, if she knew I was so long in town, without going to her.’—‘But will you certainly come to-morrow?’ ‘I am afraid you will disappoint me now you have got what you wanted.’—‘Never fear, I have not got what I want, while you have a shilling left in the world.’—Saying which, he walked away, without deigning to take any further leave. But his behaviour was not so cavalier, where he was going. The moment he entered his mistress’s room, she flew at him, not with the fondness of a dove, ‘So,’ said she, ‘what bawdy-house have you been breaking up now? You do well to come to me in such a pickle; but I’ll see you damn’d before I’ll take the trouble of nursing you.’—‘Don’t be in a passion, my love,’ said he, taking her in his arms, and giving her a kiss. ‘It is no such thing. I fell among a gang of foot-pads, who abused me in this manner because I made resistance.’—‘A very likely story truly, invented, I suppose, to excuse your not bringing me money! but if that is the case, you may go to the devil from whence you came. I’ll not be troubled with your company.’—‘No, my dear, I never come to you empty handed, let me do as I will elsewhere.’—With which words, he pulled out one of the bank notes he had just

just got from the other, and giving it to her, put her at length in good humour.

I see your indignation at a man's acting in such a manner; but you could expect no other. The same baseness of temper which could treat the other woman with insult, naturally submitted to be insulted by this. You imagine that his mistress must have uncommon attractions, to give her such power over him! You judge right.—Her's were *uncommon* indeed! She had lost her hair and teeth in a salivation! and was allowed to be the most profligate of her profession!—charms sufficient to attach a man of his taste.

My master having thus happily made his peace, the loving couple sat down to their bottle, as usual, over which happening to mention his intended marriage the next day, her delicacy took such offence, that she positively refused to consent to it, till he promised not only that she should be present, but also to return and spend his wedding-night with her, to prove her triumph over the happy bride. Accordingly, he took her with him the next evening, and introducing her to the expecting fair one, 'I have brought my girl,' said he, 'to grace our nuptials. The dear creature insisted upon it; and you know I can't refuse her any thing.' The bride elect was so enraptured at the thought of her approaching happiness, that she had no sense of the insult, but received her with politeness, perhaps not without a mixture of pride, on the occasion.

There are some scenes, the extravagance of which beggars description. I shall, therefore, only say, that the behaviour of the company was in character during the ceremony and entertainment, at the end of which the bridegroom alledging his promise to go back with his mistress, the convenient bride not only consented; but also proposed preparing an apartment for her in her own house, to save him that trouble for the future, and procure for herself the pleasure of his company—a scheme that was actually carried into execution, while she had a house to receive her; which was not very long, a continuance

of the same extravagance that had dissipated his own fortune, soon dissipating her's also. It may be imagined that I did not remain long in the possession of such a master. He lost me the next evening after his marriage, on a bet that he could repeat the Lord's Prayer, which he laid on purpose to lose, in order to prove how entirely he had got rid of the prejudices of education.

CHAP. LXIII.

Chrysal makes some reflections, not likely to be much regarded. His master pays a love-visit to a young lady, whose father interposes unpolitely, and makes some out-of-the-way objections. Chrysal's master hits upon a scheme for getting over them. He proposes marriage on certain terms, which are agreed to, and the day fixed at a little distance.

I HAVE, on former occasions, given you a sufficient description how people of fashion spend their time in gaming houses, where, though every meeting produces new misfortunes to some of the company, there is such a sameness in the manner, as will not bear repetition, and must cloy any creature not absolutely under infatuation, or obliged to make a trade of it for bread, as neither of which was the case of my new master, he left the company early, to pursue pleasures more in his own taste.

In no instance are the contradictions in human conduct so strongly shewn, as in that of man to woman. He who would lose his life rather than violate the strictest principles of honour or honesty (as they are absurdly distinguished from each other) in his intercourse with another man, not only scruples not to study deceit, and practice the blackest and basest villanies against woman, but will even glory in the success of them, when accomplished, without shewing remorse in himself, or meeting reproof from others. The reason of this is generally said to be man's partiality to his own cause, which, as he has the power of judging in his hands, whether by usurpation or right it matters not, makes him pardon in others the crime he would be glad to commit himself. But, without exculpating him in the least, woman bears a heavy share

share in the blame of her sex's ruin. I mean not by her immediate consent in her own case, but by the countenance which she shows to the perpetrators of it, in that of others; it being as certain in fact, as it is gross and absurd to thought, that the surest recommendation to the general favour of women is the fame of having ruined numbers of them.

Whether this proceeds from a vain ambition of triumphing over the triumpher, or an affectation of disdaining to espouse the cause of the fallen, as having forfeited the common regards of humanity, makes no difference in the consequence, whatever it may in the crime, as it opens an opportunity to the spoiler to extend his conquests often upon themselves, in the midst of their security; whereas, would women show a true sense of the honour of their sex, by refusing every kind of intercourse with such as had violated it, man's partiality to himself would lose its effect, and all his designs upon them be restrained within the proper boundaries of virtue.

From the place where I came into the possession of my new master, he went to pay a visit to a young lady of uncommon beauty and merit, with whom he was violently in love; that is, he was earnestly bent upon gratifying his desire for her, at the expence of her ruin; an enterprise for which he was eminently qualified, being possessed of all the advantages of youth, fortune, and address, and absolutely free from every restraint of principle, as he had proved on several successful occasions of the same kind. The reception he met showed that he had made an interest in her heart; but all his experience in the science of intrigue could not elude the vigilance of her virtue for a moment, nor find the least opening for any attack upon her honour. Such difficulties only redoubled his ardour. As he was considering, therefore, next morning, how he should proceed, he was interrupted in his meditations, by a visit from his mistress's father. After some time spent in common chat, 'I have taken the liberty to wait upon you, sir,' said the father, 'about an affair, the importance of which to my happiness will

‘ apologize, for any seeming unpoliteness in it. I have
‘ for some time taken notice of the frequency of your vi-
‘ sits to my house, the honour of which I am justly sen-
‘ sible of, but not so far dazzled by, but I can see the
‘ motive of them, through it; and, therefore, must for
‘ many reasons beg leave to desire that you will discon-
‘ tinue them.’

‘ I—I—I don’t understand you, sir;’ answered my
master, a good deal disconcerted at so unexpected an ad-
dress. ‘ I have no motive that I desire to conceal, or is
‘ any way inconsistent with the character of a gentleman.’
‘ —Pardon me, sir,’ replied the other, ‘ I mean no such
‘ thing. But yet, what may be thought consistent with
‘ that character in some things, may be very inconsistent
‘ with the happiness of a father. To be plain, sir, I am not
‘ so unacquainted with the world, but I can see all your
‘ visits are paid to my daughter: and as she is not upon
‘ a level with you, either in family or fortune, for a wife,
‘ I must repeat my request, that you will drop a pursuit
‘ which must, therefore, have another view.’—‘ You do
‘ injustice to your daughter,’ returned my master, reco-
vered from his surprise, and convinced that it was in vain
to dissemble any longer, ‘ to say that she is not upon a
‘ level with any man alive. I am above the vain pride
‘ of family; and as to fortune, my own satisfies me, with-
‘ out hazarding my happiness to seek for more.’

‘ These,’ said the lady’s father, ‘ are truly the senti-
‘ ments of a gentleman, nor have I any doubt of the sin-
‘ cerity with which you declare them. But there are
‘ other considerations that make it impossible to carry
‘ them into execution. You and my daughter profess
‘ different principles of religion; and as I can by no
‘ means expect that you should change your’s, so, I hope,
‘ she is too firmly established in her’s, to quit them for
‘ any worldly honour or advantage.’

This was a stroke my master was not prepared for.
He acquiesced, therefore, seemingly, with the best grace
he could, to avoid entering more explicitly into the sub-
ject, till he should have time to concert measures for get-
ting

ting over this new difficulty, for his honour was now piqued, and he resolved to stop at nothing, if only to punish the insolence of her father, in presuming to forbid him his house. Accordingly, after revolving a variety of schemes, he fixed upon one which he thought could not fail. Big with this hope, he went next morning to wait upon his mistress, notwithstanding the interdiction of her father, and finding her alone, after some moments of mutual confusion, on the circumstances of such a meeting, ‘I—I—I—I am come, madam,’ said my master, hesitating and blushing as he spoke, ‘I am come in consequence of what passed between your father and me yesterday, of which I presume he has informed you. It never was my design to disavow a passion, upon which depends the happiness of my life. I only waited till some particular circumstances should enable me to declare it with more convenience. But, as he has made the discovery, that reserve is no longer necessary. If, therefore, madam, I can be so happy as to find favour in your sight, all his objections, I presume, will be removed, by my offering to marry you directly; on this sole condition, that our marriage shall be kept inviolably secret, till I have accomplished some affairs, to which you must be sensible the difference of our religions would be a prejudice. The ceremony shall be performed by any clergyman you please, in the presence of your father, and any other witnesses in whose secrecy we can confide, and every thing done that can convince you of the sincerity and honour of my attachment. Speak then, dearest madam, and make me happy, by complying with a proposal that has your happiness in view equally with my own.’—‘I should be unworthy of the honour you do me,’ answered she, the blush of true modesty heightening the charms of her beauty, ‘if I could let it interfere with superior obligations. When the approbation of my father gives a proper sanction to your application to me, you will probably find no great difficulty in making my inclination go hand in hand with my duty.’

Her father just then entering, relieved her from the embarrassment

barrassment of any further conversation upon so delicate a subject ; and she withdrew. But my master was under no such difficulty. Encouraged by a reply so favourable to his hopes, he directly repeated his proposal to her father, who promised him a decisive answer next morning. As the manner of his reception left him no room to doubt of his success, he went again at the time appointed, when the father gave his consent without difficulty, as did his mistress, stipulating only for a short delay, till she should return from the wedding of a young lady, her cousin, who lived at some distance in the country, and had engaged her to attend her upon that occasion. As he could make no just objection to this, however disagreeable suspension of his hopes, he consented with a compliment, that his resolution was too firmly fixed for any time to make him change it, and then took his leave, exulting at the success of his project.

CHAP. LXIV.

Chrysal's master is privately married. Not satisfied with one wife for love, he wants another for money. He proposes the matter to his wife, on whose refusal he discloses his grand scheme ; in which, deep as it is laid, he has the mortification to find himself anticipated, and his own weapons turned upon himself. Consequences of this discovery. Chrysal's master takes a common method of silencing scandal. Chrysal changes his service.

THE smiles of hope make the sunshine of life ; as the mind is then too intent upon the object in expectation to see the inconveniences which afterwards imbitter the enjoyments of it. The absence of his mistress, though considerably longer than he had apprehended, passed away pleasantly in the thought of his approaching happiness. As soon as she returned, therefore, he directly claimed the performance of her promise, to which all parties consenting, they were married by his own chaplain, in the private manner he desired. Possessed thus of his wishes, his next care was to enjoy them with the most convenience to himself. For this purpose he took a house next to his own ; and opening a secret communication between them,

them, he removed her thither, as he could not take her directly home, without declaring his marriage.

Mortifying as the mysterious appearance of such a situation must have been to her, she made no objection, but complied implicitly, in that and every thing else, as if she had no will but his. Passions merely sensual are soon sated. Though the resemblance of this intercourse to an intrigue heightened the pleasure of it, he had not carried it on long, when an opportunity of marrying to great advantage, in the phrase of the world, awoke his ambition, and gave his wishes another turn. After some little conflict with himself, in which, however, the object in view proved too powerful for that in possession, he resolved to break the matter to his wife. Accordingly, as they sat together one morning at breakfast, after some expressions of uncommon tenderness, ‘The regard which my dearest girl has always shown for me,’ said he, blushing at his baseness as he spoke, ‘convinces me that she will not only take pleasure to hear of any thing to my advantage, but also forward it as far as may be in her power.’—‘I hope no action of my life,’ answered she, surprised at his speaking in such a manner, ‘since I have been married to you, has given any reason to doubt either my duty or affection, that you should imagine such a preface necessary to introduce whatever you think proper to command.’—‘Very true, my dearest life. But—but—but there are some things, the nature of which requires delicacy, even to you, whose understanding is superior to the foibles of your sex. You know the young lady Worthland! I have received intimation that my addresses would not be unacceptable to her. Now, as her rank and fortune would entitle me to expect the first honours in the state, I have that confidence in the attachment and love of my dearest girl, as to think you will not oppose my interest.’—‘As how!’ replied she eagerly, alarmed at the hint, but unwilling to think so meanly of him, as to understand it. ‘As how! What interest can you possibly have in her rank and fortune?’—‘The interest which the law gives an husband.’

‘censure of the world, no more than I do now, from the
‘same principle of virtuous resolution, your vain threats,
‘for in such a light the laws of my country enable me to
‘hold them.’—‘The laws of your country, madam!
‘Then claim their protection, if you please; but you will
‘find that they afford none to you. Such marriages as
‘your’s, between people professing different religions, are
‘made void by those laws, and therefore, if you think
‘proper to depend upon them, I give you this notice,
‘that you have nothing to expect from me but what they
‘shall procure you.’—‘And was this your motive,’ re-
turned she, with a spirit raised by indignation, ‘for de-
‘siring a private marriage? Impossible! you could not,
‘cannot be so base. You only have a mind to try my
‘resolution, which you shall ever find immoveable in this,
‘and every cause of virtue and honour.’

‘Madam, I have no more time to trifle in this manner;
‘therefore, once more I desire you to let me know your
‘final determination; for notwithstanding this behaviour,
‘I still have such a regard for you, that I am unwilling
‘to take an answer which must separate us for ever.
‘Think, then, before you speak; and let my making
‘you this generous offer, and preventing your exposing
‘yourself in vain, teach you a proper return of grati-
‘tude.’—‘I want not a moment to determine between
‘virtue and vice, infamy and honour.’—‘Then take the
‘consequence; and blame yourself, when it is too late.’—
‘I will; if any blame falls on me. And now that I see
‘you are serious, in return for the notice you have so
‘generously given me, I let you know, that I have ob-
‘viated the advantage you flatter yourself you have over
‘me, by conforming legally to your religion, before I
‘was married to you.’—‘Confusion! what is that you
‘say? When, where did you conform?’—‘When I went
‘to the wedding of my cousin, as you will find upon in-
‘quiry, which I advise you to make, before you proceed
‘farther in a scheme, that can only expose you to worse
‘infamy than that with which you threatened me.’—
‘Infernal witch? Was this your love?’—‘No; it was
‘the

‘ the prudence of my friends. My love could harbour no
‘ doubt of you ; but they knew you better ; and took this
‘ honest, wise precaution to guard against villany,
‘ which I now am sensible they foresaw ; and, therefore,
‘ as you have thought proper to refer me to the law, I
‘ now tell you that I will immediately claim its protec-
‘ tion, and declare my marriage, nor suffer any longer in
‘ the opinion of the world, by a secrecy that was enjoined
‘ for so base a purpose ; by which I shall at least have the
‘ satisfaction of saving another woman from falling into the
‘ snare laid for her.’—Saying this, she flung out of the
room, to conceal tears which she thought would betray a
weakness unworthy of her, and could no longer restrain.
The nature of my master’s meditations on this discovery
may be easily conceived. He cursed that foolish fondness
which had thus led him blindfold into his own snare ;
and damned all woman kind, in revenge for being foiled
at his own weapons by one of the sex.

When he had vented his rage in this manner for some
time, a sudden gleam of hope flattered him, that what
she said might possibly have been only the instantaneous
suggestion of resentment and despair, without being really
true. Pleased with the thought, he sent directly to make
the proper inquiry, the result of which confirmed the de-
feat of all his designs. But this was not the only mortifi-
cation he suffered. His wife, the moment she left him,
went to her father, and discovering to him her husband’s
baseness, he supported her in her resolution of declaring
her marriage, as the most proper means to prevent his form-
ing any further schemes against her.

The consequence is obvious. The public received such
a curious piece of scandal with pleasure ; and paid respect
to his wife, if only to show contempt for him ; particu-
larly the women, who made her’s the cause of the sex, as
he had precluded all further designs upon himself, by
marriage.

This though, however flattering to her vanity and re-
sentment at the time, only widened a breach that she
wished to close. His pride was picqued to disappoint her
design,

design, as she had his, and he left her to languish out the rest of her life in worse than widowhood, and repent of the folly of attempting to attach herself to a man who she knew had betrayed others of the sex.

As for my master, this detection made him desperate. He threw off every appearance of regard even to common decency, which he thought could no longer be of use to him, and determined to bear down scandal, by glorying in his vices ; in the performance of which gallant resolution he gave me to a stage dancer, who gave me to an half pay officer, who gave me to a Jew.

CHAP. LXV.

Chrysal comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion.

I DID not remain long in the possession of the Jew : he passed me off to a pawn broker, in the purchase of old clothes, which he was going to carry abroad.--Strange were the scenes, and unexpected the faces, which I saw in this place, where every necessary utensil of life, every ornament of luxury, was deposited, as in a place of security, by their respective owners : but your own experience makes any particular description of this place, or its manifold mysterious trade, unnecessary to you.

The misfortune of my size, (which had been continually lessening ever since the depredations committed on me by young Aminabad) kept me a prisoner here till Saturday night, when my master always *puts off* his light coin, just before he shuts shop, to the poor people, whose necessity requiring an immediate supply, for the support of life, cannot wait to return it on Monday, and so must even bear the loss.—Such a person did he think you, and accordingly gave me to you : but the moment I came into your possession, and found that you were the chosen of ten thousand, the first-born of science, whom wisdom had instructed, and art led by the hand, through the dark labyrinths of nature, till the coy fugitive, unable longer to elude your pursuit, had been obliged to consent to a revelation of her most occult wisdom, and to entrust you

with the command of that chain which links the animal and material worlds together ; the moment, I say, that I perceived who you were, and that I was the intelligence to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greatest pleasure, and waited impatient for the moment when I should confer this completion of human happiness and honour upon you ; a pleasure that was heightened by the noble constancy you shewed, when the smell of the hot ox-cheek, as you came by the cook's shop, raised that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you should purchase some of it to satisfy your hunger, or preserve me for this last experiment, in which the latter was so gloriously triumphant.

The auspicious moment is arrived ; nature labours in the throws of mystic birth ; and lo ! the philosophicking arises in all the glory of the morning. Attend to my words ! receive the consummation of human knowledge.

To apprehend this secret cause, you must know *

* * * * *

* * * * *

* * * * *

* * * * *

* * * * *

* * * * *

* * * * *

O doleful and deplorable event ! never to be told without wailing ; never to be read without tears. Just as the spirit had arrived at this most interesting point, human weakness, unable to suppress the impulse of internal vapour, which the mention of the fatal ox-cheek set in motion in my empty bowels, by the longing it raised in my stomach, emitted an explosion that filled the room with a fetid steam. The spirit started at the unpardonable offence to this purity, and looking at me with ineffable contempt, indignation, and abhorrence, vanished from my sight, without deigning a word more.

The misfortune was more than I could bear ; I sunk under its weight, and swooned away upon the floor, where officious humanity found me, and restored me to a life

a life that was a burthen under such a disappointment. The labour of my life being lost, the *one* moment in a thousand years slipped away in vain. But such is the consequence of human weakness ; such is the end of all the works of man.

CONCLUSION.

And now, O my brother in disappointment, who readest this most lamentable catastrophe, whether thou art a tailor, whose principal debtor is made a lord—a physician, whose nostrum is discovered—a cobbler, who sleepest over thy last, in hopes of dreaming of hidden treasure—a poet whose play is refused—or a senator, who hast mortgaged thine estate to purchase a seat in parliament, just before its dissolution, attend to the instruction of my words, and learn from my example. Seize the present moment, nor depend upon the future ; let reason curb expectation ; reduce imagination to common sense ; and bring your wishes within the bounds of your real wants ; so shall Industry banish Necessity from your habitation, and Content turn all your possessions into gold.

THE END.



Bayerische
Staatsbibliothek
München

Johnstone, Charles, 1719-1800

Chrysal or the adventures of a Guinea

Bd.: 3 (1797)

London 1797

P.o.angl. 63-3

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10745521-9